Biochemical, cytochemical localization and physiological studies on Malpighian tubules of Locusta Migratoria L.

Ali Al-Fifi, Zarrag

How to cite:

Use policy

The full-text may be used and/or reproduced, and given to third parties in any format or medium, without prior permission or charge, for personal research or study, educational, or not-for-profit purposes provided that:

- a full bibliographic reference is made to the original source
- a link is made to the metadata record in Durham E-Theses
- the full-text is not changed in any way

The full-text must not be sold in any format or medium without the formal permission of the copyright holders.

Please consult the full Durham E-Theses policy for further details.
BIOCHEMICAL, CYTOCHEMICAL LOCALIZATION AND PHYSIOLOGICAL STUDIES ON MALPIGHIAN TUBULES OF LOCUSTA MIGRATORIA L.

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author. No quotation from it should be published without the written consent of the author and information derived from it should be acknowledged.

BY

ZARRAG ISA ALI AL-FIFI

B.Sc., M. Sc.
(King Abdulaziz University Saudi Arabia)

Being a thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy of the University of Durham.

June 1997

Graduate Society
University of Durham.

20 Nov 1997
Declaration

I hereby declare that the work presented in this document is based on research carried out by me, and that no part has previously been submitted for a degree in this or any other university.

Statement of Copyright ©

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author. No quotation from it should be published without his prior written consent, and information derived from it should be acknowledged.

Zarrag I. Al-Fifi
University of Durham
June 1997
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to express my appreciation to my supervisors, Professor K. Bowler and Professor J.H. Anstee, for their guidance and enthusiastic encouragement throughout this study, and also, for valuable discussion and assistance in the preparation of this thesis.

I am grateful to Dr. Yasmin Weaver for the supply of chelerythrine and staurosporine and Dr. Ulla Klein for the supply of monoclonal antibodies. I would like to thank Mrs C. Richardson for help and advice during the electron microscopical preparations, Mr. Paul Loftus for maintaining the insects, Dr. Sarah Marshall, Dr. Saeed AL-Ahmadi and Mr. Richard Hopkin for their support, help and friendship. I would like also to thank Mr T. Gibbons, Miss J. Chambers and other technical staff.

Finally, I am grateful to the University of King Abdulaziz and Ministry of Higher Education, Saudi Arabia, for financial support.
CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS........................................................................................................i

CONTENTS.......................................................................................................................ii

ABSTRACT.........................................................................................................................iii

GLOSSARY.........................................................................................................................v

CHAPTER 1
GENERAL INTRODUCTION.........................................................................................1

CHAPTER 2
GENERAL MATERIALS AND METHODS.................................................................29

CHAPTER 3
In vitro studies on fluid and ion secretion by the Malpighian tubules of
Locusta migratoria........................................................................................................32

INTRODUCTION..............................................................................................................32

MATERIALS AND METHODS..........................................................................................37

RESULTS..........................................................................................................................41

DISCUSSION.....................................................................................................................63

CHAPTER 4
Biochemical studies on the subcellular distribution of the enzyme
activities in Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria...............................................73

INTRODUCTION..............................................................................................................73

MATERIALS AND METHODS..........................................................................................76

RESULTS..........................................................................................................................89

DISCUSSION.....................................................................................................................97

CHAPTER 5
Biochemical studies on the subcellular distribution of the enzyme
activities from Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria........................................102

INTRODUCTION..............................................................................................................102

MATERIALS AND METHODS..........................................................................................111

RESULTS..........................................................................................................................113

DISCUSSION.....................................................................................................................131
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER 6</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Partial purification and immunocytochemical localization studies on the apical and basal membrane-rich fractions molecular biology technique.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INTRODUCTION</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER 7</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>GENERAL DISCUSSION</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>REFERENCES</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Specific inhibitors of protein kinase A (PKA), Rp-cAMP, protein kinase C (PKC), chelerythrine and staurosporine, and protein phosphatase 1 and 2A, okadaic acid, inhibited fluid secretion whilst corpora cardiaca (CC) extract and cAMP were found to stimulate fluid secretion. Tubules inhibited by PKC inhibitors, were significantly stimulated when CC extract was included in the bathing medium, but cAMP did not stimulate under these conditions. The inclusion of cAMP in the presence of Rp-cAMP failed to prevent a further reduction in the rate of secretion compared to that in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone. The addition of CC extract in presence of Rp-cAMP failed to stimulate fluid production.

The effect of PKA and PKC inhibitors on the cationic composition of "urine" in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP were studied. The composition of the secreted fluid was not significantly changed during stimulation by cAMP. Whilst, CC extract significantly increased [Na⁺], decreased [K⁺], increased Na⁺/K⁺ ratio and increased both Na⁺ flux and K⁺ flux. However, cAMP caused an increase of both Na⁺ flux and K⁺ flux, but did not alter the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio. PKC inhibitors significantly reduced the [K⁺] of the secreted fluid, without affecting its [Na⁺]. CC extract in the presence of chelerythrine or staurosporine increased [Na⁺] but [K⁺] was not reduced below the concentration that already observed in presence of these inhibitors alone. The addition of 1mM cAMP in the presence of chelerythrine or staurosporine did not significant change the ionic composition of the secreted fluid compared to that seen in presence of these inhibitors alone. 1μM chelerythrine or staurosporine caused a significant increase in the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio. This ratio increased further when tubules bathed in chelerythrine or staurosporine saline were also exposed to CC extract. However, cAMP did not change the level of Na⁺/K⁺ ratio from that observed in the presence of PKC inhibitors alone. 0.1mM Rp-cAMP caused a significant fall in [Na⁺] and a rise in [K⁺]. The addition of CC extract appeared to reverse the effects of Rp-cAMP. The Na⁺ content of the secreted fluid significantly rose, and whilst the mean K⁺ content was somewhat lower, the difference from that observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone was not significant. The addition of cAMP to the saline containing Rp-cAMP caused a significant increase in [Na⁺], restoring it to normal control levels. However, cAMP did not significantly change the [K⁺] compared with that observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone. 0.1mM Rp-cAMP caused a significant decrease in the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio and both Na⁺ flux and K⁺ flux. In contrast, the addition of CC extract or cAMP to Rp-cAMP saline caused a significant increase in the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio. Inclusion of either CC extract or cAMP plus Rp-cAMP did not reverse the decrease in Na⁺ and K⁺ flux observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone.

Immunocytochemical localization and cell fractionation methods used in conjunction with biochemical analyses demonstrate the major of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity present on basal cell membranes and HCO₃⁻-stimulated and V-type ATPase activities on the apical cell membranes. The biochemical properties of V-type ATPase activity were studied. Immunogold localization study using specific monoclonal antibodies confirmed that V-type ATPase and Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase located on the apical and basal cell membranes, respectively.

The results are discussed and a hypothetical model is proposed to account for the role of PKA, PKC and V-type ATPase enzymes in the mechanisms of ion and fluid movement across apical and basal cell surfaces.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ADP</td>
<td>Adenosine 3’,5’-diphosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATP</td>
<td>Adenosine 3’,5’-triphosphate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BBMV</td>
<td>Brush border membrane vesicles.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BSA</td>
<td>Bovine serum albumen (Fraction V, Sigma)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cAMP</td>
<td>Cyclic adenosine 3’,5’-monophosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cGMP</td>
<td>Cyclic guanine 3’,5’-monophosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CC extract</td>
<td>Corpora cardiaca extract.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAG</td>
<td>1,2-Diacylglycerol.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DCCD</td>
<td>N,N’-dicyclohexylcarbodiimide.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DDSA</td>
<td>Dodecenyl succinic anhydride.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DH</td>
<td>Diuretic hormone.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DHR</td>
<td>Diuretic hormone receptor.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMP</td>
<td>2, 4, 6, tri [dimethylaminomethyl] phenol.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMSO</td>
<td>Dimethyl sulfoxide.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E.D.T.A.</td>
<td>Ethylene diamine tetra-acetic acid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E.G.T.A.</td>
<td>Ethylene glycol bis (β-amino ethyl ether)-N,N’-tetra-acetic acid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO₃⁻-ATPase</td>
<td>Magnesium-dependent, bicarbonate-stimulated adenosine triphosphatase.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HEPES</td>
<td>4-(2-hydroxyethyl)-1-piperazine-ethanesulphonic acid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-HT</td>
<td>5-Hydroxytryptamine.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imidazole</td>
<td>1,3-diaza-2,4-cyclopentadiene.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ins-1,4,5-P₃</td>
<td>D-myo-inositol 1,4,5-triphosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IP₃</td>
<td>Inositol triphosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K⁺-ATPase</td>
<td>Magnesium-dependent, potassium-stimulated adenosine triphosphatase.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>kDa</td>
<td>Kilo Dalton.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(K⁺+H)-ATPase</td>
<td>Magnesium-dependent, potassium-hydrogen-stimulated adenosine triphosphatase.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Me</td>
<td>Metal.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MOPS</td>
<td>4-Morpholinopropanesulphonic acid.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mV</td>
<td>Millivolts.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na(^+)/K(^+)-ATPase</td>
<td>Magnesium-dependent, sodium-potassium-stimulated adenosine triphosphatase.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEM</td>
<td>N-ethylmaleimide.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NP</td>
<td>Nitrophenol.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAGE</td>
<td>Polyacrylamide gel electrophoresis.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PBS</td>
<td>Phosphate buffered saline.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P(_i)</td>
<td>Inorganic phosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PIP(_2)</td>
<td>Phosphatidylinositol 4,5-biphosphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PKA</td>
<td>Protein kinase A.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PKC</td>
<td>Protein kinase C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>Adenosine 3',5'-cyclic monophosphorothioate Rp-isomer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SDH</td>
<td>Succinate dehydrogenase.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SDS</td>
<td>Sodium dodecyl sulphate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SEM</td>
<td>Standard error of mean.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEMED</td>
<td>N,N,N',N'-Tetramethylethlenediamine.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEP</td>
<td>Transepithelial potential.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tris</td>
<td>Tris (hydroxymethyl) aminoethane.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Triton X-100</td>
<td>t-Octylphenoxypolyethoxyethanol.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tween 20</td>
<td>Polyoxyethylenesorbitanmonolaureate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V(_A)</td>
<td>Apical membrane potential.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V(_B)</td>
<td>Basal membrane potential.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V-type ATPase</td>
<td>Vacuolar type adenosine triphosphatase.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER 1

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

Over the past forty years the nature of the mechanisms of ion and fluid secretion has been investigated in a number of different insect species. Ramsay completed the first detailed studies on Malpighian tubules of the insects (Ramsay, 1953; 1954; 1956; 1958). From these studies it was concluded that "potassium is the prime mover in generating the flow of 'urine', and that, in consequence of this secretion, conditions are created which enable water and other constituents to follow". Following this seminal work came investigations into the nature of ion and fluid secretion in a number of different species of insects e.g. *Dysdercus fasciatus*, (Berridge, 1965); *Calliphora vicina*, (was *C. erythrocephala*), (Berridge, 1968; 1969); *Rhodnius prolixus*, (Maddrell, 1969; 1971; 1977); *Locusta migratoria*, (Anstee and Bell 1975; 1978; Anstee et al., 1979; Morgan and Mordue, 1981; 1983); *Glossina austeni*, (Gee, 1975a,b); *Glossina morsitans*, (Gee, 1976a,b). These and other studies confirmed that, water movements were a consequence of ion movements, and that in the majority of the species studied, K\(^+\) was essential for fluid secretion by the tubules therefore, these studies suggested that the active transport of K\(^+\) is the "prime mover" in the generation "urine". However, some other insects, such as *Rhodnius prolixus*, are able to produce "urine" in the presence of Na\(^+\) or K\(^-\) (Maddrell 1969), whilst in others, such as *Glossina morsitans*, Na\(^+\) is the "prime mover" (Gee 1976a,b).

Subsequent studies (Anstee and Bell 1975; 1978; Anstee et al., 1979; Morgan and Mordue 1981; 1983) showed that the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, in common with those of a number of other species (Berridge, 1968; Maddrell, 1969,
Chapter 1 General Introduction

1977; Phillips, 1964; Maddrell, 1971; Dalton and Windmill, 1980; Nicholls, 1985; Leyssens et al., 1992a) are able to transport K\(^+\) against a chemical gradient over a wide range of external K\(^+\) concentrations. In addition K\(^+\) are transported in preference to Na\(^+\) even when present at much lower concentrations in the bathing medium (Anstee et al., 1979). These studies lead to the following observations which support a dominant role for K\(^+\) in fluid secretion:

I) The fluid secreted by the Malpighian tubules of a variety of insects has a higher K\(^+\) concentration than the bathing medium.

II) Measurements of transepithelial potentials show that K\(^+\) movements into the lumen are thermodynamically uphill i.e. K\(^+\) entry is active.

III) The rate of fluid secretion is dependent on the K\(^+\) concentration of the bathing fluid.

Two major diffusional pathways are possible in secretory epithelia. A transcellular route in which ions penetrate the apical and basal membranes and a paracellular pathway consisting mainly of “tight” junctions in series with the lateral spaces between epithelial cells. Initially, it was thought that such junctions presented a barrier to paracellular transport (Di Bona, 1972). However, in the early 1970s, it was recognized that such epithelial “tight” junctions were not tight enough to preclude paracellular transepithelial transport (DiBona, 1972; Fromter and Diamond, 1972). Consequently, the term “tight” and “leaky” (Fromter and Diamond, 1972) became common descriptions in epithelial classification (Schneeberger and Lynch, 1984). In “leaky” epithelia, transepithelial diffusion of ions occurs paracellularly through the tight junctions and lateral intercellular spaces (Fromter and Diamond, 1972). Examples are gallbladder of Necturus (Fromter, 1972), kidney proximal tubule of Necturus (Guggino et al., 1982) and intestine of fresh water prawns (Ahearn, 1980) and Aplysia.
(Gerencser, 1983). In contrast, in tight epithelia, most ionic diffusion and water movements occur transcellularly, because the combined resistances of apical and basal membranes is lower than that of the tight junctions and intercellular spaces. Examples of this second category where “tightness” has been quantified electrophysiologically include toad urinary bladder (Reuss and Finn, 1974), fundic gastric mucosa (Spenny et al., 1974), rabbit urinary bladder (Lewis et al., 1976) and locust rectum (Hanrahan et al., 1982).

Studies on the Malpighian tubules of insects indicate that in some species secreted “urine” was slightly hypo-osmotic e.g., *Dixippus morosus*, (Ramsay, 1954), *Dysdercus fasciatus*, (Berridge, 1965) but in the majority of insects, the secreted “urine” was found to be slightly hyperosmotic to the bathing medium over a wide range of osmotic concentrations (*Locusta migratoria*, Bell, 1977; Anstee et al., 1979, *Calliphora vicina*, Berridge, 1968, and *Rhodnius prolixus*, Maddrell, 1969; 1971). On this basis one would have predicted that insect Malpighian tubules would be “leaky”. However, other studies by O’Donnell and Maddrell (1983) and O’Donnell et al., (1984) suggested that water probably moves through the cells during fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius* and that water movements are coupled to salt transport across the basal and apical cell membranes. These workers argue that water movements via a paracellular route are unlikely to represent a significant component of total transepithelial tubule secretion in this species. Similarly, from measurements on transepithelial concentration gradients and resistance, Williams and Beyenbach (1984) have concluded that the Malpighian tubule of *Aedes aegypti* should be classified as a moderately “tight” epithelium. However, in other insect epithelia, there is good evidence that some of the fluid moves through the paracellular compartment
(O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1983). Indeed, paracellular fluid flow has been suggested in the rectal pads of *Periplaneta americana*, and *Calliphora* (Wall *et al.*, 1970; Gupta and Hall, 1983) and the salivary glands of *Calliphora* (Gupta *et al.*, 1978).

Several theories have been proposed to explain how solute transport effects iso- or near iso-osmotic secretion across epithelia. Diamond and Bossett (1967; 1968) proposed the so-called “standing-gradient” osmotic flow hypothesis for fluid transporting epithelia in liver and kidney. This model is based on the functional geometry of the tissue and depends upon the “channels” produced between infoldings of the basal cell membrane and between the elongated microvillar projections of the apical cell membrane being structurally or functionally enclosed at one end. At equilibrium, a standing osmotic gradient is established along the length of each extracellular canal at both the basal and apical surfaces. This osmotic gradient is achieved by the pumping of solute across the region of cell membrane at the closed ends of each canal, such that a local difference in osmotic pressure is developed between the end space and the adjacent cytoplasm, and along the canal itself. As a result, water moves into the space from the adjacent cytoplasm so that towards the open end of canal the fluid is iso-osmotic to the cytoplasm. However, difficulties arise when this model is applied to insect Malpighian tubule secretion because the basal cell membrane infoldings and the apical microvilli are too short to permit development of solute gradients along their lengths (Taylor, 1971; Maddrell, 1977). Indeed, the ion gradients predicted by the above model were not observed in the Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus*, determinations made by electron-probe X-ray microanalysis (Gupta *et al.*, 1976; 1977). It is also suggested that the osmotic permeabilities of cell
membranes, required for near iso-osmotic secretion, are impossibly high (Hill, 1975a,b; 1977).

Another theory which has been suggested to explain the mechanism of ion and water movements across epithelia is a process of electro-osmosis (Hill, 1975a,b). Maddrell (1977), when discussing this theory in relation to insect Malpighian tubules, suggested that apical electrogenic cation pumps produce an electrical potential difference across the membrane. The resulting electrochemical gradient would draw Cl⁻ out from the cell through the membrane, and in crossing the membrane Cl⁻ would frictionally interact with water molecules and cause them also to move out of the cell. This mechanism relies on the maintenance of a potential gradient across the apical cell membrane. This and the standing-gradient model are not mutually exclusive (Taylor, 1971; Maddrell, 1977).

Other observations for water movement have proposed and elaborated in some form of "local osmosis" (Taylor, 1971; Maddrell, 1971) as a theory (Diamond, 1964) for insect Malpighian tubule function. This theory proposes that, as a result of solute pumping across the basal and apical cell membranes, the cytoplasm becomes marginally hypertonic to the bathing medium due to active solute transport, and similarly, the lumen content becomes marginally hypertonic to the cytoplasm. However, Maddrell (1980) argued against the paracellular route for water movement across the Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* which, when stimulated, have one of the highest rates of fluid transport yet reported (see Phillips, 1981). Unlike vertebrate gallbladder and proximal renal tubule, intercellular channels in tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* are relatively rare, comprising only 0.034% of the total surface area (Maddrell, 1980). Furthermore, septate junctions extend along almost the whole length of these
intercellular channels (Maddrell, 1980; Phillips, 1981). Fluid secretion by a paracellular route should also be indicated by the passive movement of large solutes, e.g., xylose, sucrose and inulin, which presumably also take this pathway. However, Maddrell (1980) found that the net flux of these sugars remained unchanged when fluid secretion by tubules of Rhodnius prolixus was increased approximately 7-fold by the application of the diuretic hormone mimic, 5-hydroxytryptamine (5-HT). Indeed, if inulin could pass through these intercellular junctions, it would be difficult to imagine how these structures could have reflection coefficients for monovalent ions high enough to create the osmotic gradients required for water movement (Maddrell, 1980; Phillips, 1981). Furthermore, if ion movements did take place via a paracellular route, it would be most difficult to explain the difference in composition between haemolymph and luminal fluid. Maddrell (1980) concluded that water movement across the tubules of Rhodnius prolixus occurs largely through the cells, and that the static fluid between the apical microvilli need only be 2-3% hyperosmotic to the haemolymph to cause normal rates of fluid secretion by simple osmosis. A result of these findings, the Malpighian tubules of Rhodnius prolixus would be classified as a “tight” epithelium. Therefore, these differences of osmotic pressure, water would move passively across the epithelial cell. The apical and basal surfaces of Malpighian tubule cells consist of microvilli and basal infoldings respectively which increase the surface area of the cell exposed to extracellular fluids. These amplifications increase the passive permeability of the cells and so increase the driving force for fluid secretion (Taylor, 1971).

Whatever the exact mechanism for coupling of ion and water movements, the various models agree, that fluid secretion by insect Malpighian tubules is a
consequence of solute transport. Ion transport across cell membranes requires the presence of various cell membrane proteins (Scoble et al., 1986) such as:

I) Uniporters, which facilitate the movement of an ion down its concentration gradient.

II) Symporters which facilitate the movement of an ion down its concentration gradient associated with the movement of a second ion against a concentration gradient, the latter ion undergoing secondary active transport.

III) Antiporters, which link the diffusion of ion down its concentration gradient with that of a second ion in the opposite direction.

IV) ATPases, which link the movement of ions to ATP hydrolysis.

V) Channels, which form pores through the membrane, allowing passive diffusion of ions down their electrochemical gradients.

A variety of workers have suggested an electrogenic cation pump in the apical membrane of Malpighian tubules of *Glossina morsitans*, Gee, 1976a,b; Nicolson and Isaacson, 1996; *Calliphora vicina*, Berridge, 1968; 1969; *Rhodnius prolixus*, Maddrell, 1971; 1977; O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984; *Locusta migratoria*, Anstee et al., 1986; Baldrick 1987; Fogg et al., 1991. This apical pump was believed to be relatively non-specific in nature because, although K⁺ is the principal ion transported, other cations can be transported under appropriate conditions (Harvey et al., 1983a). For example, Berridge (1968) found that in Malpighian tubules of *Calliphora vicina*, Rb⁺ also maintained a high rate of fluid production when it replaced K⁺ in the bathing medium. Calcium and sodium could also support fluid secretion but at a lower rate. However, studies carried out by Marshall (1995) found a large amount of K⁺ (61.9 ±
was still being secreted by the tubule cells of *Locusta* even after they had
been pre-incubated in Rb⁺-(K⁺-free) saline for 45 min. This is a significantly lower
amount than that found in the secreted fluid after 45 min incubation in K⁺-saline (111.6
± 7.5 mM), and than the amount (115.9 ± 9.6 mM) secreted by the tubule cells after 5
min pre-incubation in Rb⁺-(K⁺-free) saline. A similar result has also been reported by
Anstee *et al.*, (1979), Fathpour (1980) and Bell (1977), who recorded K⁺ still being
secreted (at levels of approximately 40 mM) when tubules were bathed in K⁺-free
saline. Therefore, although the amount of K⁺ being secreted fell with respect to the
length of incubation in Rb⁺-(K⁺-free) saline, as would be expected as no K⁺ was
entering the cell, a substantial amount of K⁺ was still being secreted. Furthermore, as
shown by X-ray microanalysis (Pivovarova *et al.*, 1994a) the cells contained only
approximately 10% of the K⁺ found in control cytoplasm. This suggests that the ion
pump at the apical surface must have a high affinity for K⁺. At the same time the
amount of Na⁺ being secreted remained fairly constant even though its intracellular
content rose considerably when tubules had been incubated in Rb⁺-saline. This
suggests that if there is a common exit pump for K⁺ and Na⁺ then that pump must have
a much greater affinity for K⁺. Alternatively Na⁺ leaves by a different apical mechanism
(Wessing and Zierold, 1996).

The tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* could also secrete at impressive rates (40% of
the rate recorded in control saline) in an ammonium solution containing no Na⁺ or
K⁺ (Maddrell, 1969). These results along with the fact that *Rhodnius* is able to secrete
at the same rate in K⁺-free solutions led Maddrell (1969) to propose a mechanism
whereby at low K⁺ concentrations the pump mechanism could switch from pumping K⁺
to Na⁺. Maddrell (1977) later presented a model for fluid secretion involving a
common cation pump. He proposed that if the apical pump was non-specific then the cation which would be transported from the cell to the lumen would be the one found at the highest intracellular levels. Using this model it was possible to explain the results obtained using the Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* without postulating that the apical membrane had two separate pumps for Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) and why in the insect *Glossina morsitans*, Na\(^+\) was the "prime mover". In *Rhodnius prolixus*, it was suggested that the apical pump had a higher affinity for Na\(^+\), but the permeability of the basal membrane and the electrochemical gradient of the ions involved would determine the availability of Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) for the apical pump (Maddrell, 1977). Therefore, the secretion of a Na\(^+\)-rich "urine" by the Malpighian tubules of *Glossina morsitans*, (Gee, 1976a,b) and *Glossina austeni*, (Gee, 1975a,b) would result if the basal membrane had a higher permeability to Na\(^+\) than K\(^+\). However, in species where membrane had a higher permeability to K\(^+\) then K\(^+\) would be the dominant cation in the cytoplasm and be transported via the apical pump into the lumen (Maddrell, 1971; 1977).

In the majority of insect tubules secreting a K\(^+\)-rich fluid, K\(^+\) presumably exits from the cell via a K\(^+\)/H\(^+\) antiporter, the energy being provided by a proton gradient generated by a V-type ATPase (Wieczorek *et al.*, 1991; Leyssens *et al.*, 1992a,b; 1994; Nicolson, 1993; Marshall, 1995). In bloodsucking insects, where Na\(^+\) plays a more important or major role in fluid secretion, a Na\(^+\)/H\(^+\) antiporter is postulated. Alternatively, the luminal membrane might possess a single type of antiporter mediating both K\(^+\)/H\(^+\) and Na\(^+\)/H\(^+\) exchange, but with a preference for Na\(^+\) (Maddrell and O'Donnell, 1992). Acid secretion will result when H\(^+\)/cation exchange by the antiporter does not keep pace with the proton pump. This occurs in tubules of
**Chapter 1 General Introduction**

*Drosophila* and *Rhodnius* treated with amiloride an inhibitor of Na\(^+\)/H\(^+\) antiporters (Bertram, 1989; Maddrell and O'Donnell, 1992).

"Urine" formation depends on the availability of anions to accompany the active transport of K\(^+\) (Berridge, 1969) in order to maintain electroneutrality. Since the "urine" is rich in KCl, it has generally been accepted that Cl\(^-\) is the accompanying anion. Cl\(^-\) transport across the basal membrane is thought to be by secondary active transport, i.e. Cl\(^-\) moves against an electrical gradient but the energy for this process comes from its linked transport to an ion that is moving down a favourable gradient (Phillips, 1981; O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984; Hegarty et al., 1991). This type of linked ion transport is carried out by symporters (Scoble et al., 1986). However, basal Cl\(^-\) channels have been detected in the Malpighian tubules of a desert beetle (Nicolson and Isaacson, 1987) but they are not found in the basal membrane of tubules of the yellow fever mosquito (Sawyer and Beyenbach, 1985). Cl\(^-\) movement across the apical membrane is believed to be passive in all species as there is a favourable electrical gradient (Nicolson, 1993) and apical Cl\(^-\) channels have been detected (Wright and Beyenbach, 1987; Wieczorek et al., 1989). However, there is some suggestion that Cl\(^-\) transport may occur paracellularly in the ant (Dijkstra et al., 1994a) and the tsetse fly (Isaacson and Nicolson, 1994).

Apical Cl\(^-\) channels have been identified in Malpighian tubules of *Aedes aegypti* (Wright and Beyenbach, 1987). The electrical gradient favours passive exit of Cl\(^-\) across the apical membrane in all species. Whether the main pathway for chloride movement is transcellular or paracellular is not yet clear, however, Leyssens et al., (1992a) suggested, on the basis of the very high apical membrane resistance in *Formica*, that much of the Cl\(^-\) current may pass through a paracellular shunt rather
than through apical channels. In *Aedes* the CI$^-$ pathway appears to be either paracellular or via a second cell type (Pannabecker *et al.*, 1993).

Relative ionic permeabilities of the basal membrane can be assessed in unperfused tubules: changes in bath K$^+$ concentration have an almost Nernstian effect on $V_b$ in several species (reviewed by Nicolson, 1993; Beyenbach, 1995). The existence of basal K$^+$ channels has been confirmed indirectly by the effects of barium ions on tubules of *Onymacris*, (Nicolson and Isaacson, 1987) and *Formica*, (Weltens *et al.*, 1992), and directly by a patch clamp study on the basal membrane of *Onymacris* tubules stripped of their surrounding connective tissue (Nicolson and Isaacson, 1990).

Using ion-sensitive microelectrodes, Leyssens *et al.*, (1991) measured surprisingly variable K$^+$ activities in cells of *Formica* tubules: 82mM when bath K$^+$ was 41mM, but only 29 mM when bath K$^+$ was reduced to 4mM. Yet the K$^+$ concentration in the secreted fluid is independent of bath K$^+$ (Van Kerkhove *et al.*, 1989). Many epithelial cells display a large basal K$^+$ conductance and, in common with other cells also possess a Na$^+/K^+$-ATPase on their basal surface which pumps Na$^+$ out of the cell in exchange for K$^+$. The large basal K$^+$ conductance allows K$^+$ entering the cell through the Na$^+/K^+$-ATPase to return to the serosal side (Hanrahan *et al.*, 1986). This permeability to K$^+$ has an effect on the membrane potential which in turn influences ion flux through channels and transporters (Hanrahan *et al.*, 1986). Passive movements of ions can occur across cell membranes in response to a concentration or electrical gradient driving this flux. Ions can pass through a membrane via carriers or through pores/channels. Almost all channels display gating, that is, they can exist in more than one conformation (open or closed) and the stimulus for the transition between open and closed states can be a change in voltage across the membrane or by the use of
chemicals that can open or block channels. Channels have been discovered that allow the movement of Na⁺, K⁺, Ca²⁺ and Cl⁻ (Van Driessche and Zeiske, 1985).

It has been suggested that ion movement into the cell across the basal membrane occurs via a coupled Na⁺/ K⁺ pump (Berridge, 1967; Berridge and Oschman, 1969; Anstee et al., 1986)). In the majority of tissues examined, the enzyme “pump” responsible for such exchange is a Mg²⁺ -dependent (Na⁺+K⁺) -stimulated ATPase, first demonstrated by Skou (1957). Further studies revealed that this enzyme is ubiquitous in animal cells and established some of its major features, it is located in cell membranes and inhibited by ouabain (for review see Skou, 1965; Schuurmans Stekhoven and Bonting, 1981; Skou and Esmann, 1992). Indeed, Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity has been demonstrated in microsomal preparations of Malpighian tubules and hindgut of *Locusta migratoria* (Anstee and Bell, 1975; 1978; Anstee et al., 1979; 1986; Peacock, 1976; Kalule-Sabiti, 1985; Fogg et al., 1991; Marshall, 1995). Other studies have provided evidence for the existence of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase in the rectal tissue of *Periplaneta americana* (Tolman and Steele, 1976), the hindgut and Malpighian tubules of *Jamaicana flava*, *Schistocerca gregaria* and *Homorocoryphus nitidulus vicinus* (Peacock et al., 1972; 1976), the rectum of *Schistocerca gregaria* (Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988), Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* (Maddrell and Overton, 1988) and the Malpighian tubules of *Aedes aegypti* (Hegarty et al., 1991). Its occurrence is restricted to cell membranes, with hydrolysis of ATP at the inner side of the membrane resulting in the transfer to the extracellular fluid of 3Na⁺/ATP molecule. This occurs in exchange for 2K⁺ in the majority of cases (for review see Schwartz et al., 1975; Schuurmans Stekhoven and Bonting, 1981; Cantley, 1981; Skou and Esmann, 1992). In support of the proposal by Berridge and Oschman (1969) that a
basal electrogenic Na\(^+/K\(^+\)-ATPase enzyme is responsible for the cytoplasm of most cells having a high (100-160 mM) K\(^+\) concentration, but relatively low (3-30 mM) Na\(^+\) concentration (Bonting, 1970; Rodriguez and Edelman, 1979; Ernst et al., 1980; Schuurmans Stekhoven and Bonting, 1981; Anstee and Bowler, 1984; Lechleitner and Phillips; 1988; Lebovitz et al., 1989; Fogg et al., 1991; Skou and Esmann, 1992).

O'Donnell and Maddrell (1984) reported that Na\(^+\) and Cl\(^-\) were co-transported at the basal cell membrane of Malpighian tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus*, this was a rational idea as electrochemical gradients favoured Na\(^+\) but not Cl\(^-\) entry, and that blockers of NaCl co-transport (Palfrey and Greengard, 1981; Palfrey and Rao, 1983), furosemide and bumetanide, had effects consistent with the presence of a NaCl co-transport mechanism in the Malpighian tubules. O'Donnell and Maddrell (1984) proposed that, during rapid fluid secretion stimulated by 5-HT or the naturally occurring diuretic hormone, a Na\(^+/K\(^+/2Cl\(^-\) co-transporter, located on the basal membrane, was responsible for the movement of Na\(^+\), K\(^+\) and Cl\(^-\) into the cell, thus allowing the movement of K\(^+\) against its concentration gradient. A catholic apical cation pump was proposed for the extrusion of K\(^+\) and/or Na\(^+\) from the cell, with Cl\(^-\) exit being passive. Thus, the fluid secreted would contain approximately equal concentrations of K\(^+\) and Na\(^+\) (Maddrell, 1969). However, the fluid secreted by non-stimulated tubules contained only low levels of Na\(^+\) (Maddrell and Overton, 1988). Williams and Beyenbach (1984) also produced evidence of coupled cation-Cl\(^-\) movement during stimulated fluid secretion by the Malpighian tubules of *Aedes aegypti*.

Baldrick et al., (1988), from microelectrode studies on Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, found that the basal cell membrane potential (V\(_B\)) was largely
accounted for by the selective permeability of this membrane to $K^+$ and its relative impermeability to $Na^+$ and $Cl^-$. These workers suggested some passive $Na^+$ entry would occur due to large concentration and electrical gradients and proposed that $Cl^-$ transport was linked to this $Na^+$ movement as indicated by using furosemide and bumetanide in electrophysiological and fluid secretion studies (Baldrick, 1987). However, the evidence for $Na^+/K^+/2Cl^-$ co-transport in tubules of this insect was not as conclusive as for *Rhodnius proluxus* (O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984). Indeed, it was suggested that $Cl^-$ entry was not necessarily dependent on co-transport with $Na^+$, and the possibility of $2K^+-2Cl^-$ co-transport was not ruled out (Baldrick et al., 1988).

Later Fogg (1990), continuing the work of Baldrick, suggested that there was no conclusive evidence for the presence of a $Na^+/K^+/2Cl^-$ co-transporter on the basal surface of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* since furosemide and bumetanide did not have strong electrophysiological effects. However, from flux studies it was demonstrated that $Cl^-$ transepithelial transport was stimulated by high external $K^+$, in $Na^+$-free conditions. Hence it was proposed that $Cl^-$ entry may be dependent on the external $K^+$ concentration but not on the presence of $Na^+$ and so may enter by a $K^+-Cl^-$ transport mechanism. $K^+-Cl^-$ transport is relatively insensitive to loop diuretics compared to $Na^+/K^+/2Cl^-$ transport (O'Grady et al., 1987). $K^+$ stimulated $Cl^-$ transport had been reported in locust rectum by Hanrahan and Phillips (1982, 1983a,b). However, in control saline the electrochemical gradient for $K^+-Cl^-$ transport was unfavourable. Therefore it was concluded that there must be some $Cl^-$ entry by other, possibly furosemide sensitive, mechanisms (Figure 1.1).
Figure 1.1 (Fogg, 1990)

Cl⁻ entry was also suggested to occur in exchange for HCO₃⁻, as proposed for the rectal gland of Aedes dorsalis (Strange and Phillips, 1984) and by the activity of (Cl⁻+HCO₃⁻)-ATPase, as proposed for the intestinal epithelium of Aplysia (Gerencser and Lee, 1985) or for Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria (Fogg, 1990). Previous ion substitution experiments using Cl⁻-free and HCO₃⁻-free saline containing acetazolamide gave similar electrophysiological results, suggesting that Cl⁻ and HCO₃⁻ transport were linked (Baldrick, 1987). Furosemide has been suggested to have a relatively non-specific effect (Palfrey et al., 1980). It has been shown to effect Cl⁻/HCO₃⁻ exchange (Chipperfield, 1986). Additionally, Fogg (1990) detected an anion-stimulated ATPase on the basal membrane and this enzyme has been related to Cl⁻/HCO₃⁻ exchange (Herrera et al., 1978) and active Cl⁻ transport (Lechleitner and
Phillips, 1988). Finally, Fogg (1990) and Fogg et al., (1991), were unable to demonstrate a K\(^+\)-stimulated ATPase on the apical membrane, suggested that the anion-stimulated ATPase which could be detected was a possible candidate for the cation pump.

During fluid secretion, Fogg (1990), suggested that diuretic hormone (DH) appears to interact with its basal membrane receptor (DHR) resulting in the elevation in levels of two intracellular second messengers, cAMP and Inositol 1,4,5-triphosphate (Ins-1,4,5-P\(_3\)). cAMP, in turn, stimulates the apical electrogenic cation pump. This pump was suggested to transport K\(^+\) predominantly, but is relative unspecific and may transport some Na\(^+\). Ins-1,4,5-P\(_3\) effects the release of Ca\(^{2+}\) from intracellular stores. Ca\(^{2+}\), in turn, when was proposed to cause an increase in Cl\(^-\) conductance across both the basal and apical membranes. Increased Cl\(^-\) conductance across the basal membrane could be brought about by stimulation of both the Cl\(^-\)/HCO\(_3^-\) exchanger and the anion-stimulated ATPase. Cl\(^-\) passively follows K\(^+(\text{Na}^+)\) into the lumen.

In a recent study on the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, Marshall (1995) proposed that a basal Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase is responsible for K\(^+\) entry into the tubule cells and for maintaining low intracellular Na\(^+\). K\(^+\) channels in the basal membrane allow passive movement of K\(^+\), under control conditions these channels would allow the passive exit of K\(^+\) from the cell. When the basal membrane hyperpolarizes K\(^+\) channels known as anomalous or inward rectifiers open and allow passive K\(^+\) entry. Passive entry of Na\(^+\) was suggested to occur at the basal surface down concentration and electrical gradients. Co-transporter action at the basal membrane allowing linked Na\(^+\), K\(^+\) and Cl\(^-\) entry, although it is thought possible that under Na\(^+\)-free conditions the co-transporter could operate as a KCl transporter (see Figure 1.2).
At the apical membrane Marshall (1995), suggested that $K^+$ exit is postulated to occur via an antiporter which is energized by a V-type ATPase (Figure 1.2). The antiporter can accept $K^+$ and $Na^+$ but has a much higher affinity for $K^+$. The exit of $Cl^-$ occurs passively down a favourable electrical gradient.

![Figure 1.2 (Marshall, 1995)](image)

The existence of a $K^+$-ATPase pump in an insect epithelium was first deduced by Ramsay (1953; 1954; 1956; 1958) from in vivo measurements on Malpighian tubules of *Dixippus morosus*, and later demonstrated by Harvey and Nedergaard (1964) in isolated, short-circuited larval lepidopteran midgut. Evidence for a similar pump in salivary and labial glands followed (Berridge and Patel, 1968; Kafatos, 1968). More recently, evidence has been presented that a similar $K^+$-pump is responsible for generating the receptor current in a variety of insect sensilla (Kuppers and Thurm, 1979; Wieczorek, 1982). The $K^+$-pump in all of these epithelia shared many similar
characteristics and was therefore tacitly assumed to be similar at a molecular level (see reviews by Thurm and Kuppers, 1980; Harvey, 1982).

Malpighian tubules are not the only secretory structures where active transport of $K^+$ has been demonstrated. Harvey and Nedergaard (1964) and Harvey et al., (1967) used radioactive tracer methods to show that the short circuit current across the midgut of *Hyalophora cecropia* was mainly due to the active transport of $K^+$. Harvey et al., (1968), later demonstrated this transport was electrogenic and was responsible for generating a midgut potential in excess of 100mV. Ultrastructural evidence linked this active electrogenic step to the apical membrane (Anderson and Harvey, 1966) and Blankemeyer and Harvey (1978) confirmed this suspicion with microelectrode studies. Insect sensilla cells also contain an apical $K^+$ pump (Thurm and Küppers, 1980) and studies by Berridge and Prince (1972a), Prince and Berridge (1972), Berridge et al., (1976) produced evidence for an apical pump in the salivary glands of *Calliphora*. The presence of an apically located $K^+$ pump in various insect tissues is reviewed by Harvey (1980) and Harvey et al., (1983b), where evidence is also presented for an apical $K^+$ pump in *Manduca sexta* midgut.

The first evidence for the presence of a V-type ATPase in Malpighian tubules came from the work of Bertram et al., (1991) working on *Drosophila hydei*. They discovered that fluid secretion was inhibited by NEM and bafilomycin A1, and suggested that the V-type ATPase produced a pH gradient which would provide energy for extrusion of $K^+$ by an electroneutral antiporter (see Figure 1.3.). Weltens et al., (1992) suggest a similar apical exit mechanism for $K^+$ in the Malpighian tubules of *Formica polyctena*. 
Zeiske (1992) proposed a model to explain fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Manduca sexta*. He suggested that insects with low haemolymph K^+ possessed both the antiport and a Na^+/K^+-ATPase on their basal membrane, but insects with rich haemolymph K^+ possessed K^-channels in the basal membrane which provided the main entry mechanism for K^+, a Na^+/K^+-ATPase being undetectable. At the apical surface, he proposed that there would be a V-type ATPase and an antiporter, with chloride channels as shown above. This has become the standard model to explain fluid secretion across the Malpighian tubules of many insects (Leyssens *et al.*, 1992b; Nicolson, 1993).

Maddrell and O'Donnell (1992) suggested a model to explain ion movements underlying secretion by insect Malpighian tubules prior to the discovery that an H^+-pumping V-type ATPase was involved (Figure 1.4.A). The transport processes on the
haemolymph-facing membrane illustrate the different ways that ions enter the cell, tubules that transport mainly K\(^+\) and Cl\(^-\), Na\(^+\) and Cl\(^-\), or both. However, they proposed another model for ion movements underlying secretion by insect Malpighian tubules incorporating an H\(^+\) -pumping V-type ATPase on the luminal cell membrane (see Figure 1.4.B)

![Diagram showing ion transport](image)

Figure 1.4 (Maddrell and O'Donnell, 1992).

Zhang \textit{et al.}, (1994) working with \textit{Formica polyctena} measured the cellular and luminal pH of Malpighian tubules when the concentration of K\(^+\) in the medium bathing the tubules was varied. In all conditions a cell-inward electrochemical gradient for H\(^+\) was observed so they concluded that the apical H\(^+\) concentration gradient could drive electroneutral H\(^+\)/K\(^+\) exchange. Other workers have also produced evidence for the presence of a V-type ATPase and electroneutral antiporter in Malpighian tubules (Hegarty \textit{et al.}, 1992; Wessing \textit{et al.}, 1993; Leyssens \textit{et al.}, 1993a,b).
In searching for the molecular correlate of the insect K⁺ pump, Cioffi and Woltersberger (1983) succeeded in isolating the apical plasma membrane from *Manduca sexta* midgut goblet cells and demonstrated an ATPase activity associated with them (Wieczorek et al., 1986). The ATPase enzyme was a cation-stimulated rather than an anion-stimulated enzyme, this ATPase was insensitive to ouabain and fluoride but inhibited by nitrate. These properties of the "common cation pump" exhibited strong similarities to the class of proton-pumping ATPases which are termed vacuolar-type ATPases (Mellman et al., 1986; Wieczorek et al., 1986) and was subsequently purified and characterised as a vacuolar-type ATPase (Schweikl et al., 1989; Wieczorek et al., 1989; 1991; Klein et al., 1991).

The fact that exogenously applied cAMP can mimic the action of diuretic hormone in many insects and increase the rate of fluid secretion of the Malpighian tubules in, e.g. *Aedes taeniorhynchus*, (Maddrell and Phillips, 1978); *Rhodnius prolixus*, (Maddrell et al., 1971); *Carausius morosus*, (Maddrell et al., 1971); *Pieris brassicae*, (Nicolson, 1976a,b); *Cenocorixa blaisdelli*, (Cooper et al., 1988); *Glossina morsitans*, (Gee, 1976a); *Locusta migratoria*, (Anstee et al., 1980; Morgan and Mordue, 1981); *Schistocerca gregaria*, (Maddrell and Klunsuwan, 1973; James et al., 1993); *Papilio demodocus*, (Nicolson and Millar, 1983); *Onymacris plana*, (Nicolson and Hanrahan, 1986); *Cenocorixa bifida*, (Szibbo and Scudder, 1979); *Aedes aegypti*, (Petzel and Stanley-Samuelson, 1992) and *Acheta domesticus*, (Kim and Spring, 1992), led to the proposal that it was transducing the action of diuretic hormone in these organs. This is supported by the fact that diuretic hormone was also found to increase intracellular levels of cAMP in the tubules (Aston, 1975; Phillips, 1982; Fogg et al., 1990; Nicolson, 1992; Troetschler and Kramer, 1992; Lehmberg et al., 1993).
cAMP also increased the rate of fluid secretion by salivary glands (Berridge, 1970; Berridge, 1980; Berridge and Patel, 1968) and the rate of fluid absorption in the midgut (Farmer et al., 1981). Additionally, rectal cAMP levels increase 3-fold during exposure to homogenates of corpora cardiaca (Spring and Phillips, 1980). There are some cases where cAMP is reported to have no effect on the rate of fluid secretion, for example, *Musca domestica* (Dalton and Windmill, 1980).

Diuretic hormones have been identified in every insect species that has been studied, and it now appears that insects may have more than one, each operating via a different second messenger system (see review by Spring, 1990). Working with *Locusta migratoria* a set of experiments carried out by Morgan et al., (1987) produced both direct and indirect evidence for the presence of two diuretic peptides in extracts of the corpora cardiaca. When these extracts were analysed by HPLC two peaks were produced but only the peptide corresponding to one of these peaks increased cAMP levels in broken cell preparations. Serotonin also was found to increase the rate of fluid production but had no effect on the intracellular levels of cAMP suggesting a second, cAMP-independent pathway for fluid transport. Other evidence produced by Fogg et al., (1989) demonstrated that corpora cardiaca extract and cAMP exerted different effects on the apical membrane potential, again suggesting the action of diuretic hormone is mediated by more than one messenger. Fogg et al., (1990) went on to show that the levels of the second messenger inositol 1, 4, 5-P$_3$ were also increased in Malpighian tubules when exposed to diuretic hormone and so suggested that this molecule may also be involved in the response to diuretic hormone, possibly acting through cellular calcium. Evidence from other studies points to a link between inositol 1, 4, 5-P$_3$ and intracellular calcium release (Berridge, 1983; Streb et al., 1983;
Berridge and Irvine, 1984). Recently, it has been suggested that nitric oxide also has a role in the control of fluid secretion in Malpighian tubules of Drosophila where it activates the cGMP signalling pathway and is separate to the Ca\(^{2+}\) signalling system (Dow et al., 1994a).

Besides cyclic nucleotides, a new generation of phosphoinositide-derived second messengers have been identified (Michell, 1975; Berridge, 1984; Berridge and Irvine, 1984; Nishizuka, 1984; Majerus et al., 1986; Berridge, 1987). Receptor stimulation triggers the phospholipase C catalyzed hydrolytic cleavage of membrane phosphoinositol 4,5-bisphosphate (PIP\(_2\)) to yield two second messenger molecules, inositol 1,4,5-triphosphate (Ins-1,4,5-P\(_3\)) and sn-1,2-diacylglycerol (DAG), an activator of protein kinase C (Nishizuka, 1984). Once activated by DAG, together with intracellular Ca\(^{2+}\), protein kinase C proceeds to phosphorylate specific proteins that are thought to contribute to the final cellular response (for review see Berridge, 1984; 1986; 1987).

The study of the divalent cation Ca\(^{2+}\) in transport processes is limited in comparison to studies on monovalent ions, especially in insect epithelia. A central role for Ca\(^{2+}\) in secretory processes was proposed by Douglas (1968), and it has since become evident that changes in intracellular Ca\(^{2+}\) are necessary for secretion in a wide variety of tissues and that the control of intracellular Ca\(^{2+}\) is crucial for the regulation of cellular processes (Rasmussen and Goodman, 1977). Ca\(^{2+}\) plays an important role as a second messenger conveying signals received at the cell surface to the inside of the cell (Berridge, 1980). It is involved in the regulation of such diverse processes as muscle contraction, secretion of hormones, digestive enzymes and neurotransmitters, and the control of glycogen metabolism in the liver. Indeed, this cation is important in
regulation of net transport of ions and water in transporting epithelia (Taylor and Windhager, 1979; Windhager and Taylor, 1983).

The coupling of an extracellular stimulus to a physiological response in various cells, including polar epithelial cells, is mediated by a chain of intracellular “second messenger” molecules (Nishizuka, 1988; Shenolikar, 1988). In tubular cells this transducing mechanism transmits signals from receptors located at the basolateral surface to effector proteins located at the apical surface. Ca\(^{2+}\)-dependent protein kinases play a central role in signal transduction by phosphorylating, and thereby activating, effector proteins using ATP as a phosphate donor (Nishizuka, 1988; Shenolikar, 1988). Like cAMP-dependent protein kinase (protein kinase A), Ca\(^{2+}\)-dependent protein kinases specifically phosphorylate serine and threonine residues of target proteins. The two main groups of Ca\(^{2+}\)-dependent protein kinases include: (1) Ca\(^{2+}\) and phospholipid-dependent protein kinase C (PKC), (2) Ca\(^{2+}\)/calmodulin-dependent protein kinase (Nishizuka, 1988; Shenolikar, 1988). While Ca\(^{2+}\)/calmodulin-dependent protein kinase is activated by these two ligands, PKC is activated as a part of a quaternary complex which includes the kinase, diacylglycerol (or phorbolester), phospholipid (usually phosphatidylserine) and Ca\(^{2+}\) (Nishizuka, 1988).

Ca\(^{2+}\)-dependent protein kinases are known to regulate the activity of several membrane-bound ion channels and carriers in various tissues, including kidney, thereby modulating transmembrane electrolyte transport. PKC-induced phosphorylation of the catalytic subunit of the renal tubular basolateral membrane-bound Na\(^{+}/K^{+}\)-ATPase inhibits the activity of the pump (Bertorello et al., 1991; Lowndes et al., 1990). The activity of Na\(^{+}/K^{+}\)-ATPase is known to be modulated by hormones such as insulin, dopamine and prostaglandins E1 and E2, the action of which involves kinase-mediated
protein phosphorylation ((Nishizuka, 1988; Aperia et al., 1991; Taub et al., 1992). PKC inhibits the activity of the tubular luminal membrane-bound Na⁺-dependent transport mechanisms for glucose (Friedlander and Amiel, 1989) and phosphate (Quamme et al., 1989; Boneh et al., 1989). PKC activation is important in parathyroid hormone-mediated inhibition of the latter transporter (Hruska et al., 1987; Quamme et al., 1989). Weinman and Shenolikar (1986) and Weinman et al., (1988) have demonstrated that the renal apical membrane Na⁺/H⁺ exchanger is stimulated by PKC. In a further study (Horie et al., 1992) showed that long-term activation of PKC leads to a chronic persistent increase in Na⁺/H⁺ exchanger activity that is dependent on transcription and translation.

Isolated brush border membrane vesicles (BBMV) have served as an extremely useful model to explore directly carrier-mediated transport processes (Murer and Gmaj, 1986). Nevertheless, because of the complexities and various cell compounds involved in protein kinase action, the role of these enzymes in membrane transport has been traditionally investigated using whole tissue or cell preparations. A number of studies, successfully probed the effect of various protein kinases on Na⁺/phosphate (Hammerman and Hruska, 1982) and Na⁺/H⁺ exchange (Weinman and Shenolikar, 1986; Weinman et al., 1987; Rood et al., 1988) in isolated renal BBMV. This was achieved by opening the vesicles or making them permeable to large molecular weight cofactors and nucleotides using “hypoosmotic shock” (Hammerman and Hruska, 1982; Weinman et al., 1987). This allowed access of the phosphorylation “machinery” to the inner cytoplasmic surface.

Using the “hypoosmotic shock” method, Hammerman and Hruska (1982), demonstrated that cAMP-dependent phosphorylation of BBMV proteins was
associated with specific inhibition of Na⁺-stimulated phosphate transport. Using the same method, (Weinman et al., 1987) showed that cAMP, acting through the endogenous membrane-bound protein kinase A as well as the exogenous catalytic subunit of protein kinase A, inhibited Na⁺/H⁺ exchange in rabbit renal BBMV. In contrast, PKC stimulated the activity of the rabbit renal Na⁺/H⁺ exchanger (Weinman and Shenolikar, 1986).

Wang and Giebisch (1991b) reported that the stimulating effect of ATP on K⁺ channel activity is mediated by phosphorylation of the channel by cAMP-dependent protein kinase A (PKA). In contrast to the effect of PKA, stimulation of PKC inhibits the K⁺ channel by a process that has been shown to be dependent on the intracellular Ca²⁺ concentration (Wang and Giebisch, 1991a). Thus, the K⁺ channel is modulated by two different second messenger pathways: the adenylate cyclase system increases channel open probability or recruits additional channels into the apical membrane, whereas stimulation of PKC reduces channel activity.

In a recent study, Wang et al., (1993) produced evidence that apical K⁺ channel activity was linked to basolateral pump turnover rate in rat renal tubule cells. Inhibition of the basolateral Na⁺-K⁺-ATPase significantly lowered K⁺ channel activity. It has also been found that the application of staurosporine, a potent inhibitor of Ca²⁺-dependent PKC, (Wang et al., 1993) markedly diminished the effect of the pump inhibition on K⁺ channel activity. Therefore, these workers suggested that a Ca²⁺-dependent protein kinase such as PKC plays a key role in the downregulation of apical low-conductance K⁺ channel activity during inhibition of the basolateral Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase.
The major aims of the work included in this thesis are as the follows:

1) There is a paucity of information on the nature and control of the mechanisms of ion and water transport across the Malpighian tubules of insects. Furthermore, little information is available on the role of protein kinases (PKA and PKC) in ion and fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of insects. The present study was carried out to address these issues. The effect of diuretic hormone (DH), cAMP, Rp-cAMP (specific inhibitor of PKA), and chelerythrine and staurosporine (potent inhibitors of PKC) on the rate of fluid secretion and cation composition [Na⁺] and [K⁺] in the "urine" secreted by the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* was therefore addressed.

2) Isolation of the different membrane fractions from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* was carried out to permit their characterization for transport enzymes. The fractions were assured for membrane purity by marker enzyme assays and electron microscopical appearance. In addition, biochemical studies using known transport inhibitors have been used to examine activities of the Mg²⁺-dependent HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase prepared from basal and apical membrane fractions of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

3) The involvement of a V-type ATPase has been demonstrated previously (Marshall, 1995) in fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. Therefore, the main aim of this study was purification of the apical membrane fraction and determination of the characteristics of the V-type ATPase. Immunocytochemical and immunogold localization techniques were used to confirm that the V-type
ATPase and \( \text{Na}^+ /\text{K}^+ \)-ATPase were located in the apical and basal membrane, respectively, in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. 
CHAPTER 2

GENERAL MATERIALS AND METHODS

Maintenance of Insects:

A stock population of *Locusta migratoria* L. was maintained in an insectary at 28 ± 0.5 °C and a relative humidity of 60 ± 0.5% with a constant photoperiod of 12 hours light and 12 hours dark. Continuous air exchange was provided by means of a fan-driven ventilator (Xpelair) and circulation within the room was effected by three wall-mounted electric fans. Humidity was controlled by three humidifiers (Lumatic, Humidifier Group, Bromley, Kent, England). The locusts were reared in perspex-fronted cages (41 cm x 41 cm x 60 cm, supplied by Philip Harris Biological Supplies Ltd., Oldmixon, Weston-super-Mare, Avon, England). Each cage was illuminated by a 40 Watt bulb and consequently the temperature within the cage varied from 28-36°C depending on the distance from the bulb and the photoperiod. Humidity within each cage also varied with the addition of fresh food and water. Locusts were fed daily on fresh grass, water and bran. Animals were reared at sufficiently high population density to prevent reversion to the solitary phase (Joly and Joly, 1953).

Glassware:

Pyrex glassware was used throughout. Prior to use it was cleaned by soaking overnight in a 2% Teepol laboratory detergent followed by several rinses in hot tap water and final rinsing in deionized water (six times). All items were then dried in ovens.
Chemicals:

All chemicals and drugs were AnalaR grade or the purest commercially available and were largely supplied by Sigma Co., Poole, Dorset, England. Lubrol was gift from I.C.I. Dyestuffs Division. Primary monoclonal antibodies, directed to the V-ATPase from insect plasma membrane (midgut of *Manduca sexta* larvae) were kindly supplied by Prof. Dr. Ulla Klein, Laboratory Wieczorek, Zoological Institute of the University of Munich. Mouse monoclonal antibody IgG α 5 raised against the α-subunit of the avian sodium pump was generously donated by Prof. D.M. Fambrough, The Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Maryland, USA. Chelerythrine chloride was kindly supplied by Dr. Yasmin Weaver, University of Liverpool. Adenosine-3',5'-cyclic monophosphorothioate, Rp-isomer (Rp-cAMP) sodium salt was purchased from BioLog, Life Science Institute, Bremen, Germany.

Solutions:

Saline solution buffered with HEPES (pH 7.2) was used throughout, unless otherwise stated. The composition of this saline solution was as in Table 2.1 (Baldrick *et al.*, 1988).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Salt</th>
<th>Concentration (mM)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NaCl</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCl</td>
<td>8.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MgCl₂</td>
<td>8.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaCl₂</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaH₂PO₄</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaHCO₃</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glucose</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HEPES</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaOH</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Where necessary, bafilomycin A₁ was dissolved in DMSO before adding it to the appropriate saline. The final concentration of DMSO in the experimental saline was <1% and in all studies using this chemical, the same concentration of DMSO was included in the controls.

Statistics:

Statistical comparisons of data were carried out using either Student's t-test or a paired t-test (Snedecor and Cochran, 1967) with reference to the statistical tables of Fisher and Yates (1963). Values where p<0.05 were taken as significant. Data are presented as mean ± SEM unless otherwise stated.
CHAPTER 3

In vitro studies on fluid and ion secretion by the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria.

INTRODUCTION

Fluid and ion secretion by Malpighian tubules of numerous insect species has been shown to be under endocrine control (Gee, 1977; Maddrell, 1981; Phillips, 1981; 1982; 1983; Nicholson and Hanrahan, 1986; Wheelock et al., 1988; Dedecker et al., 1994; Patel et al., 1995; Spring and Kim, 1995; Coast, 1995; 1996). Furthermore, there is increasing evidence to suggest that the action of diuretic hormone on Malpighian tubules is mediated by intracellular messengers (Prince et al., 1972; Aston, 1975; Rafaeli et al., 1984; Morgan and Mordue, 1983; 1985; Williams and Beyenbach, 1983; Petzel et al., 1985; 1986; 1987; Rafaeli, 1990; Fogg et al., 1989; 1990; 1993). The role of cAMP as an intracellular second messenger, mediating the action of diuretic hormone on insect Malpighian tubules, has been proposed mainly on the basis that exogenously applied cAMP stimulates tubule secretion, in vitro, in a number of different species, including Locusta (Anstee et al., 1980; Morgan and Mordue, 1981; Rafaeli and Mordue, 1982). Furthermore, it is generally recognized that the regulation of levels of intracellular cAMP depends upon a balance between the rates of production by adenylate cyclase and degradation by phosphodiesterase. The role of the latter enzyme is indicated by studies which show that fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of Locusta (Morgan and Mordue, 1985) is stimulated by the phosphodiesterase inhibitor IBMX. In addition, various ion transport processes have been shown to respond similarly to treatment with this agent and dibutyryl cAMP (Fogg et al., 1989).
Insect DH's are; 1) synthesized by the median cells (neurosecretory cells) of the pars intercerebralis and subocellar regions of the brain followed by transportation, via the nervi corpora cardiaci II, to the storage lobes of the CC extract from where they are released into the haemolymph, or 2) they are produced in the ventral suboesophageal and thoracic ganglia and released from adjacent neurohaemal organs in response to abdominal stretching (Phillips, 1982; 1983; Proux et al., 1982). Arginine-vasopressin (AVP) and oxytocin (OT), were first reported as neurohypophyseal hormones in mammals then characterized (for review, see Acher, 1974). AVP has two major effects: water reabsorption and elevation of blood pressure (Proux, 1993). In insects, AVP-like acts as a diuretic hormone by increasing the urine excretion from the Malpighian tubules as demonstrated both in vivo (Proux et al., 1982) and in vitro (Proux et al., 1988; Proux et al., 1982). Investigations are due to determine the ionic pumps and channels involved in the diuretic activity of the AVP-like. This diuretic action is mediated by cyclic AMP (Proux and Herault, 1988).

A number of studies report differing responses to diuretic hormone and cAMP (Williams and Beyenbach, 1984; Nicholson and Isaacson, 1987; Fogg et al., 1989). These observations have led to the recognition that cAMP, alone, cannot mediate the full effects of diuretic hormone on Malpighian tubules of Locusta. Morgan and Mordue (1984) reported that 5-HT stimulation of fluid secretion by locust tubules was only 65% of the diuretic hormone-stimulated rate and that the action of 5-HT was not mediated by cAMP. It was suggested that two spatially distinct membrane receptors were involved in the endocrine control of fluid secretion, one activating adenylate cyclase and leading to increased intracellular cAMP, and the other triggering a different secondary event, possibly leading to increased intracellular Ca\(^{2+}\) concentration. This
proposal is similar to that suggested for salivary glands of *Calliphora erythrocephala* in which two distinct types of 5-HT receptors have been reported, with one activating adenylate cyclase and the other the calcium-phosphoinositide cascade (Berridge and Heslop, 1981; 1982; Berridge et al., 1984). Further support for such a mechanism in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta* comes from the demonstration that corpora cardiaca extract (CC), with diuretic activity, stimulated an increase in intracellular cAMP and inositol 1,4,5-triphosphate (Ins-1,4,5-P3) it was suggested that the latter acted as the calcium-mobilizing intracellular messenger (Fogg et al., 1990). Fogg et al., (1989) and Nicolson and Isaacson (1996) suggested that cAMP stimulated the apical cation pump, whilst a rise in [Ca$^{2+}$]_{i} might serve to increase anion conductance across both basal and apical cell membranes. More recently, Davies *et al.*, (1995) and O'Donnell *et al.*, (1996) have reported that a cardioacceleratory peptide, CAP$_{2b}$, present in *Drosophila*, stimulated tubule fluid secretion and increased the transepithelial potential via cGMP production. This suggested that the stimulation of the apical V-type ATPase was involved.

Leucokinin, other neuropeptides, isolated from the head and ganglia of the cockroach *Leucophaea maderae* (Holman *et al.*, 1986; 1987) and were found to stimulate fluid secretion in *D. melanogaster*, are believed to act by the elevation of calcium and not to affect intracellular levels of either cAMP or cGMP (Davies *et al.*, 1995; O'Donnell *et al.*, 1996). Pannabecker *et al.*, (1993) and Beyenbach, (1995) demonstrated that one of the leucokinins, leucokinin-VIII, increases the rates of transepithelial NaCl, KCl and fluid secretion. Furthermore, leucokinin-VIII depolarizes the transepithelial voltage in a dose-dependent manner to values close to 0 mV, an effect which is diminished when the Cl concentration in the peritubular Ringer bath is...
reduced (Hayes et al., 1989). The non-selective increase in the secretion of NaCl and KCl suggested that leucokinin-VIII increases the availability of Cl⁻ as Na⁺ and K⁺ are transported (secreted) through the active transport pathway. Examination of the electrical circuit of transepithelial transport indicated that rates of transepithelial NaCl and KCl secretion will increase when leucokinin-VIII increases the Cl⁻ permeability of the epithelial shunt.

Both cAMP and cGMP ultimately act by regulating the activity of nucleotide-dependent protein kinase enzymes, A-kinase and G-kinase, respectively. These protein kinases catalyse the phosphorylation of various cellular proteins. Such phosphoproteins may be enzymes which are activated by this process or non-enzymatic proteins such as membrane channels, structural proteins or regulatory proteins. In some processes, cGMP prompts responses opposite to those promoted by cAMP suggesting opposing intracellular actions (Dow et al., 1994a,b). The primary hormonal stimulus is transduced into a regulated functional response. These several demonstrations of the elevation in a number of intracellular messenger molecules associated with tubule fluid stimulation, by hormones or their analogues, suggest a role for the phosphorylation state of proteins closely involved in ion translocation across the apical and/or basal membranes (Fogg et al., 1989; Dow et al., 1994a,b; Davies et al., 1995; O'Donnell et al., 1996). A number of inhibitors of several classes of protein kinases and phosphatases have been identified. For example, chelerythrine and staurosporine have been reported to be specific inhibitors of protein kinase C (PKC), at low concentrations (micromolars) (Tamaoki et al., 1986; Oka et al., 1986; Herbert et al., 1990; 1993; Mizuno et al., 1993; Liu et al., 1994). Rp-cAMP has been reported as
a more specific inhibitor for protein kinase A (PKA) (Rothermel et al., 1984; Ricter-Landsberg and Jastorff, 1985).

In the last decade there has been considerable interest in a further group of second messenger molecules derived from membrane phosphoinositides. Appropriate receptor stimulation triggers phosphoinositidase C-catalysed cleavage of membrane phosphatidylinositol 4,5-bisphosphate to yield two second messenger molecules, Ins-1,4,5-P₃ and sn-1,2-diacylglycerol (DAG); the latter being an activator of C-kinase (Nishizuka, 1984). There is now general agreement that Ins-1,4,5-P₃ induces the release of Ca²⁺ from the endoplasmic reticulum (Berridge and Irvine, 1984; Abdel-Latif, 1986; Berridge, 1986) and thus triggers the biological response to 'calcium-mobilizing' hormones. Intracellular Ins-1,4,5-P₃ levels have been shown to increase in Malpighian tubules of Locusta following treatment with corpora cardiaca extracts with established diuretic activity (Fogg et al., 1990). However, a role for DAG and C-kinase in the regulation of tubule function remains to be established.

The present study has been carried out to determine the effect of various inhibitors of nucleotide-dependent protein kinase C (chelerythrine, staurosporine) and protein kinase A (Rp-cAMP) on fluid and cation secretion by Malpighian tubules of Locusta under stimulated and unstimulated conditions with a view to further elucidating the endocrine control of tubule secretion.
MATERIALS AND METHODS

Rate of Fluid Secretion:

In vitro measurements of rates of fluid secretion by the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta* were carried out using essentially the same technique as that described by (Maddrell and Klunsuwan, 1973; Anstee and Bell, 1975 and Donkin and Anstee, 1980). Malpighian tubules of adult female were used in all experiments as they were found to give a consistent rate of fluid secretion and furthermore, it was observed that the rate of fluid secretion by female tubules in the presence of corpora cardiaca extract was double of that obtained by male tubules. Locusts were killed by twisting the head, breaking the arthrodial membrane between the head and thorax. The extreme tip of the abdomen was cut off allowing the whole gut, bearing the Malpighian tubules, to be carefully drawn out through the thorax with the head still attached. The gut of the experimental animal was immersed in a small volume of control saline in a hollow in a perspex dish. The head remained outside the dish and care was taken to prevent contamination of the bathing media by regurgitated digestive fluid. The entire preparation was covered with liquid paraffin. Up to ten tubules were drawn out of the saline bath into the surrounding liquid paraffin and looped around small stainless steel pegs. Each tubule was then partially severed at a convenient point along its length between two pegs using a fine tungsten needle. At the end of a 15min equilibration period, any secreted ‘urine’ droplet emerging from the partially severed tubule was removed and discarded. The secretion rate for individual tubule was then determined by measuring the diameter of the secreted ‘urine’ droplet at 5min intervals over a period of 20min (Rate 1). At the end of this time the bathing medium was replaced by a fresh solution which had either the same
composition (control) or a different (experimental). The rate of secretion was redetermined over the next 20min (Rate 2). A 15min equilibration period, in the appropriate saline, was allowed prior to determination of Rate 1 and Rate 2 secretion.

The rate of fluid secretion was expressed in nl/min. In all experiments controls were used to indicate the extent to which any changes in the rate of secretion over the two periods of measurement were the result of ageing of the preparation. The temperature throughout was maintained at 30 ± 0.1°C by placing the perspex dish on a temperature controlled plate.

**Corpora Cardiaca Extract Preparation:**

Extracts were prepared immediately prior to use by dissecting corpora cardiaca from the heads of mature male *Locusta migratoria*. The corpora cardiaca were then homogenized in an appropriate ice-cold (0-4°C) buffered saline at 1 gland pair per 0.1ml of saline (Fogg *et al.*, 1989), unless otherwise stated, and stored on ice until required. Homogenization was carried out in a glass homogenizer with a Teflon pestle (clearance 0.1-0.15mm) with 20 passes of the plunger at approximately 1000 rev/min. The resulting homogenate was subsequently diluted with the appropriate saline to a final concentration of 1 gland pair per ml.

**Measurement of the Na⁺ and K⁺ concentrations of the 'urine':**

*In vitro* preparations were set up as described above. Concentrations of Na⁺ and K⁺ in bathing media and secreted fluids were determined by atomic emission spectroscopy using a Perkin-Elmer 5000 spectrophotometer. Following preincubation for 20min in an appropriate saline, fluid secreted by individual tubules was collected over the next 45min (initial rate) and 'pooled' under liquid paraffin. 0.5μl or 1μl were...
then transferred by micropipette to a plastic vial containing 1 or 2 ml deionized water. The bathing medium was then replaced by a fresh solution which had either the same composition (controls) or a modified composition (experimentals) and following a further 20 min equilibration period, the fluid secreted by the same tubules over the next 45 min (final period) was collected, ‘pooled’ and treated as described for fluid collected over the initial period. Samples were stored in plastic vials prior to their analysis.

Emission readings were compared with standard calibration curves constructed with known concentrations of KOH and NaOH (Figures 3.1 and 3.2).

**Determination of the effects of various inhibitors and stimulators on Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) concentration in the 'urine':**

Malpighian tubule preparations were set up in saline solution as outlined above. Control experiments were carried out in the standard saline solution (as described in Table 2.1 chapter 2). The effect of adding inhibitors or stimulators to the saline was investigated. “Urine” samples were collected at the end of the initial 45 min period (Rate 1) and analysed in the manner described above. The saline solution bathing the tubules was then replaced with fresh saline solution containing one of the following: 1 μM chelerythrine or 1 μM staurosporine, 0.1 mM Rp-cAMP, CC extract, 1 mM cAMP, CC extract or 1 mM cAMP + either 1 μM chelerythrine, 1 μM staurosporine or 0.1 mM Rp-cAMP. Following an equilibration period of 30 min, in the presence of a given saline solution, any secreted fluid was discarded. The “urine” collected over the next 45 min (Rate 2) was analysed and Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) concentrations determined.
Chapter 3 Materials & Methods

Figure 3.1

Calibration curve for potassium hydroxide concentration against % emission, estimated using a Perkin-Elmer 5000 spectrophotometer wavelength at 766.5nm.

Ordinate: % emission
Abscissa: [K⁺] mM

Figure 3.2

Calibration curve for sodium hydroxide concentration against % emission, estimated using a Perkin-Elmer 5000 spectrophotometer wavelength at 595nm.

Ordinate: % emission
Abscissa: [Na⁺] mM
Chapter 3

RESULTS

Effect of corpora cardiaca (CC) extract and cAMP on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules:

Table 3.1 shows that under control conditions (both rates being measured in control saline) rate 2 was 95.4±0.9% of the rate measured during the initial period. When the data were compared using a paired t-test no significant difference was seen between the initial (4.6±0.3nl/min) and final (4.3±0.3nl/min) measurement periods (n=30). Addition of corpora cardiaca (CC) extract (final concentration 1 gland pair/ml) to the bathing medium, increased the rate of fluid secretion from 4.2±0.4nl/min to 8.3±0.7nl/min (n=35), representing a mean increase of approximately 100% (p<0.0001) over the unstimulated rate. Similarly, the inclusion of 1mM cAMP in the bathing saline increased the rate of fluid secretion from 4.4±0.5nl/min (rate 1) to 6.6±0.7nl/min (Rate 2) (n=27), representing a mean increase of approximately 49%. Comparison of obtained values by paired t-test showed that inclusion of 1mM cAMP in the bathing medium produced a significant (p<0.0001) increase in the rate of fluid secretion.

Table 3.1 The effect of CC extract or 1mM cAMP on fluid secretion of Malpighian tubules of Locusta.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Rate of Fluid secretion (nl/min)</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>4.6±0.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 normal</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>4.3±0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>4.2±0.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + CC extract</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>8.3±0.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>4.4±0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + cAMP</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>6.6±0.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values obtained by comparison of Rates 1 and 2 by paired t-test.
Mean values ± SEM.
n.s.: Not significant.
Effect of Chelerythrine on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules:

The mean rate of fluid secretion was 4.6±0.3 nl/min (n=30), when the tubules were bathed in control saline during the first 20 min period of measurement. Results presented in Figure 3.3a show that under these control conditions (both rates being measured in control saline) rate 2 was 95.4±0.9% of the rate measured during the first 20 min period. The dose dependency of fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules in the presence of chelerythrine at concentrations of 0.07-60μM was investigated. At the lowest concentration used (0.07μM) fluid secretion was inhibited by 18.1% (p<0.005) whereas 60μM chelerythrine caused 84% inhibition (see also Appendix 2, Table 2.1). IC₅₀ for fluid secretion was 2.9μM as determined by probit analysis Figure 3.3b.

Effect of Chelerythrine and Staurosporine on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules in the absence and presence of corpora cardiaca (CC) extract or cAMP:

Table 3.2 shows the effect of 1μM chelerythrine or 1μM staurosporine on fluid secretion, in the presence and absence of cAMP and CC extract. 1μM chelerythrine caused significant inhibition of fluid secretion; the rate fell from 4.5±0.6nl/min to 2.4±0.3nl/min (p<0.0001, n=24). When both rates were measured in the presence of chelerythrine, a further significant inhibition was observed; the rate decreased from 3.3±0.4nl/min to 2.3±0.3nl/min (p<0.0001, n=26). Similarly, 1μM staurosporine caused a significant decrease in fluid secretion from 5.3±0.5nl/min to 2.7±0.3nl/min (p<0.0001, n=20). Also incubation of the tubules in saline containing staurosporine (both rates being measured in the presence staurosporine) caused a further significant inhibition in fluid secretion from 3.2±0.3nl/min to 2.4±0.2nl/min (p<0.0001, n=22). These data show that both inhibitors cause a progressive inhibition of fluid secretion.
Figure 3.3a

Effect of varying concentrations of chelerythrine on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

The rate of fluid secretion was measured over two time periods. For controls, both measurements occurred in control saline. However, to determine the effect of chelerythrine on fluid secretion the first measurement of rate was recorded in control saline over a period of 20min whilst the second measurement of rate of fluid secretion was carried out over a subsequent 20 min period but in saline containing a range of concentrations of chelerythrine. This second rate was normalized with respect to that recorded over the first time period in control saline by expressing rate 2 as a % of rate 1 in the absence of chelerythrine.

**Ordinate:** Normalized Rate 2.

**Abscissa:** Chelerythrine concentration in µM.

Figure 3.3b.

Probit analysis of effect of different concentrations of Chelerythrine on the rate of fluid secretion.

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 2, Table 2.1 were converted into probits and lines of best fit, calculated according to the method shown in Appendix 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Figure 3.3a
Effect of different concentrations of chelerythrine on the rate of fluid secretion.

Figure 3.3b  Probit analysis.
The effect of CC extract and cAMP on fluid secretion must also be considered in
the light of the progressive nature of the inhibition of fluid secretion by both
chelerythrine and staurosporine during the second 20min incubation period (Rate 2).
The paired $t$-test showed that rate 1 was not stimulated by cAMP (Rate 2) in the
presence of either chelerythrine or staurosporine. Comparison of rate 2 for
staurosporine ($2.4\pm0.2$nl/min) with that for rate 2 for staurosporine + cAMP

(3.3±0.3nl/min) showed that cAMP did cause stimulation (p<0.0001). With chelerythrine however, these differences were also similar to that in the presence of staurosporine.

Making the same comparisons with stimulation with CC extract shows that the mean rate 2 in presence of CC extract was significantly higher than rate 2 in the presence of either chelerythrine (p<0.001) or staurosporine (p<0.001) alone.

**Effect of Rp-cAMP on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules:**

Figure 3.4a shows that the protein kinase A inhibitor (Rp-cAMP) inhibits fluid production over the concentration range 10μM to 1000μM, inhibition increasing with increasing concentration (see also Appendix 2, Table 2.2). In the presence of 1000μM Rp-cAMP, approximately 62% of fluid production was inhibited (p<0.0001). Probit analysis (Figure 3.4b) gives an IC₅₀ of 264μM.

**Effect of Rp-cAMP on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules, in the absence and presence of CC extract or cAMP:**

Table 3.3 shows the effect of the protein kinase A inhibitor, Rp-cAMP on the rate of fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP. 0.1mM Rp-cAMP caused significant inhibition of the rate of fluid secretion. The rate decreased from 4.3±0.5 nl/min (in control saline) to 2.6±0.3 nl/min (p<0.0001, n=20). When 0.1mM Rp-cAMP was included in the bathing medium during both rates, the rate of fluid secretion was significantly (p<0.001) further reduced from 3.1±0.4 nl/min to 2.4±0.4nl/min (n=15) again emphasizing the progressive nature of the inhibition. The inclusion of cAMP in the presence of Rp-cAMP failed to stimulate fluid secretion or
indeed to prevent a further reduction in the rate to 2.3nl/min compared to 2.4nl/min (rate 2) in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone. The addition of CC extract in presence of Rp-cAMP failed to stimulate fluid secretion (Rate 1 compared with Rate 2), however, it did prevent further decline in rate 2 which was observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone.

Table 3.3 The effect of the protein kinase A inhibitor, Rp-cAMP, on the fluid secretion by Locusta Malpighian tubules, in the presence and absence of the stimulation by CC extract or cAMP.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Rate of Fluid secretion (nl/min)</th>
<th>P</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4.3±0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>2.6±0.3</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3.1±0.4</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>2.4±0.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4.7±0.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + CC</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>9.4±0.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 normal</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4.3±0.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + cAMP</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>6.1±0.5</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>3.0±0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + Rp-cAMP + CC</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>2.7±0.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>3.2±0.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2 + Rp-cAMP + cAMP</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>2.3±0.3</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values obtained by comparison of Rates 1 and 2 by paired t-test.
Mean values ± SEM.
n.s.: Not significant.
Figure 3.4a

Effect of varying concentrations of Rp-cAMP on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

The rate of fluid secretion was measured over two time periods. For controls, both measurements occurred in control saline. However, to determine the effect of Rp-cAMP on fluid secretion the first measurement of rate was recorded in control saline over a period of 20 min whilst the second measurement of rate of fluid secretion was carried out over a similar period but in saline containing a range of concentrations of Rp-cAMP. This second rate was normalized with respect to that recorded over the first time period in control saline by expressing rate 2 as a % of rate 1 in the absence of Rp-cAMP.

**Ordinate:** Normalized Rate 2.
**Abscissa:** Rp-cAMP concentrations in μM.

Figure 3.6b

Probit analysis of effect of different concentrations of Rp-cAMP on the rate of fluid secretion.

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 2, Table 2.2 were converted into probits and lines of best fit, calculated according to the method shown in Appendix 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Figure 3.4a

Effect of different concentrations of Rp-cAMP on the rate of fluid secretion.

Figure 3.4b  Probit analysis.
Effect of NEM on the fluid secretion:

Figure 3.5a and Appendix 2, Table 2.3 show the effects of NEM on the rate of fluid secretion at concentrations ranging from 0.1 μM to 1000 μM. Inclusion of NEM in the bathing saline for the measurement of rate 2 caused a significant inhibition of fluid secretion in a dose dependent manner. Comparing normalized control and experimental values by Student's t-test indicates that 1000 μM NEM effected significant (p<0.0001) inhibition of the rate of fluid secretion by ~92%. Figure 3.5b shows the probit analysis which indicates that the IC$_{50}$ for NEM was 9.05 μM.

Effect of Okadaic acid on the fluid secretion:

Effect of various concentrations of Okadaic acid, ranging from 0.01 nM to 1000 nM, on the rate of fluid secretion were investigated and the results are shown in Figure 3.6a. It can be seen that very low concentrations of okadaic acid (0.5 to 1000 nM) had a marked inhibitory effect on the rate of fluid secretion.

Comparison between normalized control and experimental values, using Student's t-test, established that including 1000 nM okadaic acid in the bathing saline caused a significant inhibition of the rate of fluid secretion (p<0.0001); the mean rate decreasing by approximately 70%. Similarly, 1 nM okadaic acid effected a significant decrease in the rate of fluid secretion (p<0.01), reducing the rate by approximately 25%. However, at 0.01 nM concentration, okadaic acid did not significantly affect the rate of fluid secretion. Probit analysis Figure 3.6b gives the IC$_{50}$ of 91 nM. Data are summarized in Appendix 2, Table 2.4.
Chapter 3 Results

Figure 3.5a

Effect of varying concentrations of NEM on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

The rate of fluid secretion was measured over two time periods. For controls, both measurements occurred in control saline. However, to determine the effect of NEM on fluid secretion the first measurement of rate was recorded in control saline over a period of 20 min whilst the second measurement of rate of fluid secretion was carried out over a subsequent 20 min period in saline containing a range of concentrations of NEM. This second rate was normalized with respect to that recorded over the first time period in control saline by expressing rate 2 as a % of rate 1 in the absence of NEM.

**Ordinate:** Normalized Rate 2.

**Abscissa:** NEM concentrations in μM.

Figure 3.5b

Probit analysis of effect of different concentrations of NEM on the rate of fluid secretion.

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 2, Table 2.3 were converted into probits and lines of best fit were calculated according to the method shown in Appendix 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
**Figure 3.5a**
Effect of different concentrations of NEM on the fluid secretion.

![Graph showing the effect of different concentrations of NEM on fluid secretion.][1]

**Figure 3.5b** Probit analysis.

![Probit analysis graph showing the relationship between NEM concentration and probit values.][2]
Figure 3.6a

Effect of varying concentrations of Okadaic acid on *Locusta* Malpighian tubules *in vitro* fluid secretion.

The rate of fluid secretion was measured over two time periods. For controls, both measurements occurred in control saline. To determine the effect of Okadaic acid on fluid secretion the first measurement of rate was recorded in control saline over a period of 20 min whilst the second measurement of rate of fluid secretion was carried out over a subsequent 20 min period in saline containing a range concentrations of Okadaic acid. This second rate was normalized with respect to that recorded over the first time period in control saline by expressing rate 2 as % of rate 1 in absence of okadaic acid.

**Ordinate:** Normalized Rate 2.
**Abscissa:** Okadaic acid concentrations in nM.

Figure 3.6b

Probit analysis of effect of different concentrations of okadaic acid on the rate of fluid secretion.

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 2, Table 2.4 were converted into probits and lines of best fit were calculated according to the method shown in Appendix 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Figure 3.6a
Effect of different concentrations of okadaic acid on the rate of fluid secretion.

Normalized Rate 2

0.01 0.10 1.00 10.00 100.00 1000.00

[Okadaic acid] nM

Figure 3.6b Probit analysis.

Probit

0.01 0.10 1.00 10.00 100.00 1000.00

[Okadaic acid] nM
Effect of collection period on [Na\(^+\)] and [K\(^+\)] in the “urine”:

The "urine" was collected and analysed as described previously (see Materials and Methods). Tubules were pre-incubated in control saline solution. Original saline was then replaced with fresh saline of the same composition and "urine" collected over the following 60 min period. Table 3.4 shows the monovalent cation composition of the secreted fluid collected over the 60 min period. Values were compared using paired t-test. In the case of control saline (8.6mM K\(^+\), 119mM Na\(^+\)) Table 3.4 shows that there was no significant difference in the ionic composition of the secreted fluid over the two measurement periods, which varied between 41.5±0.9mM (Rate1) and 40.7±1.2mM (Rate2) for Na\(^+\) and between 125.5±2.3mM (Rate1) and 126.9±3.2mM (Rate2) for K\(^+\). Also, the final Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio (0.34±0.01) was not significantly different from the initial Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio (0.34±0.01).

Effect of CC extract and cAMP on [Na\(^+\)] and [K\(^+\)] in the “urine”:

Table 3.4 shows that the inclusion of CC extract in the bathing medium significantly affected the ionic composition of the secreted fluid, the level of [Na\(^+\)] increased from 41.2±1.3mM to 59.3±2.0mM (p<0.0001), whereas that of [K\(^+\)] decreased from 126.8±2.9mM to 107.2±2.4mM (p<0.001). However, the total monovalent cation content of the secreted fluid was similar to that of control tubules at about 167mM. In contrast, the inclusion of 1mM cAMP in the bathing medium had no significant effect on the Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) composition of the secreted fluid. Figure 3.7 shows that 1mM cAMP did not alter the ratio of Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) in the secreted fluid. In contrast, CC extract effected a significant (p<0.0001) increase in Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio.
Table 3.4 Effect of CC extract or cAMP on the Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) concentrations in the fluid secreted by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>[Na(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>[K(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>41.5 ± 0.9</td>
<td></td>
<td>125.5 ± 2.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>40.7 ± 1.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>126.9 ± 3.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>41.2 ± 1.3</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>126.8 ± 2.9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + CC extract</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>59.3 ± 2.0</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>107.2 ± 2.4</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>41.4 ± 1.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>123.5 ± 4.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + 1mM cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>40.5 ± 1.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>124.3 ± 3.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*p* values were obtained by comparing rate 1 and rate 2 by paired *t*-test.

R1: Rate 1.
R2: Rate 2.
n.s.: Not significant.

An estimation of the changes in the flux of Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) caused by the incubation of either CC extract or cAMP in the bathing medium can be made by calculating the product of the volume secreted and its cation concentration. Table 3.5 shows such values calculated from the mean data in tables 3.2 and 3.6. In control media the mean flux of Na\(^+\) was between 190.9 (Rate 1) and 175.0 pmole/nl/min (Rate 2), and between 545.7 (Rate 1) and 545.7 pmole/nl/min (Rate 2) for mean K\(^+\) flux. The inclusion of CC extract in the bathing medium was found to increase the mean Na\(^+\) flux from 173.0 to 492.2 pmole/nl/min, and K\(^+\) flux from 532.6 to 889.8 pmole/nl/min. The addition of 1mM cAMP to the control saline caused a smaller increase in the mean Na\(^+\) flux from 182.2 to 267.3 pmole/nl/min, and mean K\(^+\) flux from 543.4 to 820.4 pmole/nl/min.
Table 3.5 The effect of CC extract or 1mM cAMP on mean Na⁺ and K⁺ flux:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>Na⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
<th>K⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>190.9</td>
<td>577.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 normal</td>
<td>175.0</td>
<td>545.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>173.0</td>
<td>532.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + CC extract</td>
<td>492.2</td>
<td>889.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>182.2</td>
<td>543.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + cAMP</td>
<td>267.3</td>
<td>820.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

R1: Rate 1.
R2: Rate 2.

Effect of chelerythrine on [Na⁺] and [K⁺] in the "urine" in the absence and presence of CC extract or cAMP:

The effect of chelerythrine on the ionic composition of the secreted fluid is shown in Table 3.6. The fluid secreted over the initial period in the absence of chelerythrine contained approximately 42.4±1.8mM Na⁺ and 125.7±3.9mM K⁺ (n=15). Bathing tubules in saline containing 1μM chelerythrine had no significant effect on [Na⁺], whilst, the level of K⁺ significantly (p<0.001) decreased from 125.7mM to 107.7mM.

The effect of adding CC extract in the presence of chelerythrine is also shown in Table 3.6. As can be seen, the effect of CC extract on the composition of the secreted fluid was similar to that observed in absence of chelerythrine; Na⁺ concentrations rose to 51.1mM, but the concentration of K⁺ was not reduced significantly below the concentration that had already been observed in presence of chelerythrine alone. The total monovalent cation concentration of the secreted fluid was 157.8mM and whilst not significantly different from that in the presence of chelerythrine alone 151.0mM, it was lower (p<0.005) than that in the presence of CC extract alone (166.5mM). The addition of 1mM cAMP in the presence of chelerythrine did not significant change the ionic
composition of the secreted fluid compared to that seen in presence of chelerythrine alone.

Table 3.6  Effect of 1μM chelerythrine on the Na⁺ and K⁺ concentrations in the fluid secreted by Malpighian tubules of Locusta in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>[Na⁺] mM</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>[K⁺] mM</th>
<th>P</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>*R1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>41.5 ± 0.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>125.5 ± 2.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*R2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>40.7 ± 1.2</td>
<td></td>
<td>126.9 ± 3.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>42.4 ± 1.8</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>125.7 ± 3.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 +1μM Chel.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>43.3 ± 0.8</td>
<td></td>
<td>107.7 ± 1.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>41.2 ± 1.3</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>126.8 ± 2.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*R2 + CC extract</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>59.3 ± 2.0</td>
<td></td>
<td>107.2 ± 2.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 +1μM Chel.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>41.5 ± 1.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>107.9 ± 2.5</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Chel. + CC extract</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>51.1 ± 3.1</td>
<td></td>
<td>106.7 ± 5.4</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 +1μM Chel.</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>42.5 ± 1.6</td>
<td></td>
<td>107.0 ± 2.8</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Chel. + cAMP</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>43.9 ± 2.4</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>102.7 ± 4.4</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>41.4 ± 1.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>123.5 ± 4.1</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*R2 + 1mM cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>40.5 ± 1.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>124.3 ± 3.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*p* values were obtained by comparing rate 1 and rate 2 by paired *t*-test.
Chel. = Chelerythrine.
R1: Rate 1; R2: Rate 2.
n.s.: Not significant.
*Data already presented in table 3.4

From the results in Figure 3.7 and Appendix 2, Table 2.5 it can be seen that 1μM chelerythrine caused a significant (*p*<0.0001) increase in the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio. This ratio (0.38±0.01) increased further when tubules bathed in chelerythrine saline were also exposed to CC extract (0.48±0.01). However, cAMP did not change the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio from that than observed in the presence of chelerythrine alone.
**Figure 3.7**

Effect of 1 μM chelerythrine on the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio in the presence and absence of CC extract (1 gland pair/ml) or 1 mM cAMP.

**Ordinate:** Na⁺/K⁺ ratios in the presence or absence of inhibitor or stimulator.

**Abscissa:** Inhibitor and/or stimulator

Ch. = Chelerythrine

C.C. = Corpora cardiaca extract.

Ch. + C.C. = R₁ in the presence of chelerythrine alone.

R₂ in the presence of chelerythrine + corpora cardiaca extract

Ch. + cAMP = R₁ in the presence of chelerythrine alone.

R₂ in the presence of chelerythrine + cAMP

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Table 3.7 showed that inclusion of 1μM chelerythrine in the bathing medium caused a decrease in both Na⁺ and K⁺ flux by approximately 46% and 54.3%, respectively. The addition of CC extract in the presence of chelerythrine caused an increase in Na⁺ flux and did not alter K⁺ flux compared to that observed in the presence of chelerythrine alone. When 1mM cAMP was included in the bathing medium in the presence of chelerythrine it did not alter the effect seen in the presence of chelerythrine alone on Na⁺ and K⁺ flux.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>Na⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
<th>K⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>190.8</td>
<td>565.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + chelerythrine</td>
<td>103.9</td>
<td>258.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + chelerythrine</td>
<td>120.4</td>
<td>312.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + chelerythrine + CC extract</td>
<td>189.1</td>
<td>394.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + chelerythrine</td>
<td>119.0</td>
<td>299.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + chelerythrine + cAMP</td>
<td>131.7</td>
<td>308.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

R1: Rate 1; R2: Rate 2.

Effect of staurosporine on [Na⁺] and [K⁺] in the “urine” in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP:

The effect of 1μM staurosporine on the Na⁺ and K⁺ composition of the fluid secreted in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP is shown in Table 3.8. It can be seen that the effect of staurosporine was similar to that observed with chelerythrine. Staurosporine alone significantly (p<0.001) reduced the K⁺ concentration in the secreted fluid from 125.2mM to 108.9mM without significantly affecting the Na⁺ concentration. Addition of CC extract in the presence of staurosporine significantly (p<0.0001) increased [Na⁺] from 40.4mM to 50.3mM, but [K⁺] was not significantly
reduced below the concentration observed in the presence of staurosporine alone. As previously described, cAMP did not significantly affect Na\(^+\) or K\(^+\) concentrations in the secreted fluid, nor did cAMP significantly modify the effect of staurosporine alone on the concentrations of these two cations.

Table 3.8 Effect of 1\(\mu\)M staurosporine on the Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) concentrations in the fluid secreted by Malpighian tubules of Locusta in the presence and absence of cc extract or cAMP:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>[Na(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>[K(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>41.6 ± 1.1</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>125.5 ± 2.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>40.7 ± 1.2</td>
<td></td>
<td>126.9 ± 3.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>42.4 ± 1.6</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>125.2 ± 2.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 +1(\mu)M Staur</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>41.5 ± 1.5</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>108.9 ± 1.8</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 +1(\mu)M Staur.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>40.4 ± 2.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>110.9 ± 3.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Staur. + CC extract</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>50.3 ± 3.8</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>104.1 ± 3.5</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 +1(\mu)M Staur.</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>41.7 ± 0.7</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>110.1 ± 1.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Staur. + cAMP</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>40.5 ± 0.8</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>108.4 ± 2.7</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(p\) values were obtained by comparing rate 1 and rate 2 by paired \(t\)-test.

Staur. = Staurosporine.
R1: Rate 1, R2: Rate 2.
n.s.: Not significant.

The effect of staurosporine on the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP is shown in Figure 3.8. It can be seen that 1\(\mu\)M staurosporine caused a significant \((p<0.0001)\) increase in the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio from 0.33±0.01 to 0.38±0.01 \((n=13)\). Bathing tubules in staurosporine saline in the presence of CC extract effected a further significant \((p<0.0001)\) increase in the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio from 0.38±0.01 to 0.47±0.01 \((n=15)\). However, cAMP had no significant effect on the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio compared with that observed in the presence of staurosporine alone (see also Appendix 2, Table 2.6).
Figure 3.8

Effect of 1\mu M staurosporine on the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio in the presence and absence of CC extract (1 gland pair/ml) or 1mM cAMP.

Ordinate: Na⁺/K⁺ ratios in the presence or absence of inhibitor or stimulator.

Abscissa: Inhibitor and/or stimulator.

St. = Staurosporine.

C.C. = Corpora cardiaca extract.

St. + C.C. = R1 in the presence of staurosporine alone.

R2 in the presence of staurosporine + corpora cardiaca extract.

St. + cAMP = R1 in the presence of staurosporine alone.

R2 in the presence of staurosporine + cAMP.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Table 3.9 showed that inclusion of 1μM staurosporine in the bathing medium caused a decrease in the mean Na⁺ flux from 224.7 to 112.1 pmole/nl/min and in K⁺ flux from 663.6 to 294.0 pmole/nl/min. The addition of CC extract in the presence of staurosporine caused an increase in Na⁺ flux and did not change the K⁺ flux compared to that observed in the presence of staurosporine alone. However, when 1mM cAMP was included in the presence of staurosporine it did not alter the mean Na⁺ and K⁺ flux from that observed in the presence of staurosporine alone.

Table 3.9 Effect of 1μM staurosporine on the mean Na⁺ and K⁺ flux in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>Na⁺</th>
<th>K⁺</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>224.7</td>
<td>663.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + staurosporine</td>
<td>112.1</td>
<td>294.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + staurosporine</td>
<td>137.4</td>
<td>377.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + staurosporine + CC extract</td>
<td>211.3</td>
<td>437.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + staurosporine</td>
<td>120.9</td>
<td>319.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + staurosporine + cAMP</td>
<td>133.7</td>
<td>357.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

R1: Rate 1, R2: Rate 2.

Effect of Rp-cAMP on [Na⁺] and [K⁺] in the “urine” in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP:

Table 3.10 shows the effect of Rp-cAMP on the Na⁺ and K⁺ composition of the secreted fluid in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP. The ionic composition of the fluid secreted control tubules showed that K⁺ concentration during rate 2 was approximately 126.9mM whilst Na⁺ concentration was approximately 40.7mM. The addition of Rp-cAMP caused a significant (p<0.005) fall in [Na⁺] from 37.1mM to 28.4mM and a significant (p<0.002) rise in [K⁺] from 123.7mM to 147.7mM, increasing the total Na⁺ + K⁺ content from 160.8mM to 176.1mM.
The addition of CC extract appeared to reverse the effects of Rp-cAMP. The Na\(^+\) content of the secreted fluid significantly (p<0.02) rose from 26.5 to 35.9mM, and whilst the mean K\(^+\) content was somewhat lower, the difference from that observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone was not significant. The total monovalent cation content was unchanged by the addition of CC extract compared with Rp-cAMP alone.

Table 3.10 Effect of 0.1mM Rp-cAMP on the Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) concentrations in the fluid secreted by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta* in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>[Na(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>[K(^+)] mM</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>41.6 ± 1.1</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>125.5 ± 2.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>40.7 ± 1.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>126.9 ± 3.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>37.1 ± 1.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.005</td>
<td>123.7 ± 3.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>28.4 ± 1.4</td>
<td>&lt;0.005</td>
<td>147.7 ± 3.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>26.5 ± 2.1</td>
<td>&lt;0.02</td>
<td>138.4 ± 1.7</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP + CC extract</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>35.9 ± 2.2</td>
<td>&lt;0.02</td>
<td>129.1 ± 7.0</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>26.8 ± 2.8</td>
<td>&lt;0.02</td>
<td>140.2 ± 6.0</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP + cAMP</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>38.5 ± 2.1</td>
<td>&lt;0.02</td>
<td>138.0 ± 3.8</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*p* values were obtained by comparing rate 1 and rate 2 by paired *t*-test.

R1: Rate 1.
R2: Rate 2.
n.s.: Not significant.

The addition of cAMP to the saline containing Rp-cAMP caused a significant (p<0.02) increase in Na\(^+\) concentration from 26.8 to 38.5mM, restoring it to normal control levels. However, cAMP did not significantly change [K\(^+\)] compared with that observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone, producing a fluid with an increased monovalent cation composition of 176.1mM.

Figure 3.9 shows the effect of 0.1mM Rp-cAMP on the mean Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio in the presence and absence of CC extract or cAMP. It can be seen that the inclusion of 0.1mMRp-cAMP caused a significant (p<0.0001) decrease in the mean Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\) ratio.
from 0.30±0.01 to 0.19±0.01. In contrast, the addition of CC extract or cAMP to Rp-
cAMP saline caused a significant increase (p<0.0001 for both cases) from 0.19±0.01 to
0.28±0.01 and from 0.19±0.01 to 0.28±0.02 respectively, (see also Appendix 2,
Table 2.7).

Table 3.11 shows that 0.1 mM Rp-cAMP decreased Na⁺ flux from 159.5 to 73.8
pmole/nl/min and K⁺ flux from 531.9 to 384.0 pmole/nl/min. Inclusion of either CC
extract or cAMP plus Rp-cAMP did not reverse the decrease in Na⁺ and K⁺ flux
observed in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Bathing media</th>
<th>Na⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
<th>K⁺ pmole/nl/min</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>R1 normal</td>
<td>159.5</td>
<td>531.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>73.8</td>
<td>384.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + Rp-cAMP</td>
<td>79.5</td>
<td>415.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP + CC extract</td>
<td>96.9</td>
<td>348.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R1 + Rp-cAMP + cAMP</td>
<td>85.8</td>
<td>448.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R2 + Rp-cAMP + cAMP</td>
<td>88.6</td>
<td>317.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

R1:    Rate 1.
R2:    Rate 2.
Figure 3.9

Effect of 0.1 mM Rp-cAMP on Na⁺/K⁺ ratio in the presence and absence of CC extract (1 gland pair/ml) or 1 mM cAMP.

Ordinate: Na⁺/K⁺ ratios in the presence or absence of inhibitor or stimulator.

Abscissa: Inhibitor and/or stimulator.
- C.C. = Corpora cardiaca extract.
- Rp-cAMP + C.C. = R1 in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone.
  R2 in the presence of Rp-cAMP + corpora cardiaca extract.
- Rp-cAMP + cAMP = R1 in the presence of Rp-cAMP alone.
  R2 in the presence of Rp-cAMP + cAMP.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Chapter 3

DISCUSSION

All of the inhibitors used in this study (chelerythrine, staurosporine, Rp-cAMP, NEM and okadaic acid) inhibited the fluid producing capacity of the Malpighian tubule cells despite having different target sites of inhibition. Chelerythrine and staurosporine are both inhibitors of protein kinase C (PKC) (Tamaoki et al., 1986; Oka et al., 1986). Rp-cAMP is an inhibitor of protein kinase A (PKA) (Rothermel et al., 1984; Richter-Landsberg and Jastorff, 1985), at the concentrations used NEM is a putative inhibitor of V-type ATPase (Bowman et al., 1988; Forgac 1989; Wieczorek et al., 1989; 1991; Bertram et al., 1991; Weltens et al., 1992 Bertram and Wessing, 1994; present study) and okadaic acid is a specific inhibitor of protein phosphatases 1 and 2A (Takai et al., 1987; 1989; Bialojan and Takai 1988; Fujiki and Suganuma, 1993).

The mechanisms of fluid production by Malpighian tubule cells, and their control by hormonal stimulation, are therefore likely to be complex and the purpose of the present work is to establish whether, by the use of specific inhibitors, further insight might be gained.

At the basal surface the primary transporters are likely to be the Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase (Anstee and Bell, 1975; Anstee et al., 1979; Anstee et al., 1986) and the Na⁺/K⁺/2Cl⁻ co-transporter (Palfrey and Rao, 1983; Phillips and Hanrahan, 1984; Geck and Heinz, 1986; Maddrell and Overton, 1988). Evidence also exists for the presence of an anomalously rectified K⁺ channel at the basal surface (Marshall, 1995). At the apical surface it is proposed that a V-type ATPase (Wieczorek et al., 1989; 1991; Bertram et al., 1991; and reviews by Nicolson, 1993; Dow, 1994) produces a proton gradient that drives Na⁺/H⁺ and K⁺/H⁺ exchange antiporters (Fogg et al., 1991; Zeiske, 1992; Beyenbach,
Chloride ions are thought to exit via Cl\(^{-}\) channels. Control of fluid production may involve the regulation of activity of a variety of these channels and transporters. It is proposed that the basal Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase contributes to K\(^+\) entry into the cell, in exchange for Na\(^+\), thus, maintaining the Na\(^+\) gradient across the basal membrane. This function for the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase had previously been suggested for the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* by Fogg (1990) and Baldrick *et al.*, (1988) and also for the tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* (O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984). The Na\(^+\) gradient established by the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase can be used to drive the basal co-transporter which is likely to be a K/Na/2Cl (O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984; Phillips and Hanrahan, 1984; Maddrell and Overton, 1988).

In the present study CC extract and cAMP stimulated the rate of fluid secretion by *Locusta* Malpighian tubules by approximately 100 or 50%, respectively. These results confirm earlier reports that fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules is hormonally controlled in the majority of insect species which have been studied, including *Locusta migratoria* (Anstee *et al.*, 1980; Rafaeli and Mordue, 1982; Fogg *et al.*, 1990; Gee, 1977; Schwartz and Reynolds, 1979; Nicolson, 1980; Maddrell, 1981; Phillips, 1981; Williams and Beyenbach, 1983; Rafaeli, 1990; Hegarty *et al.*, 1991; Clark and Spring, 1992; Beyenbach, 1995; Lehmerg, *et al.*, 1993; Nicolson and Isaacson, 1996). Tubular secretion rates are stimulated by a family of neuropeptide diuretic hormones (DH) in insects which are believed to operate via a second messenger system involving cAMP and/or IP\(_3\) and Ca\(^{2+}\) (Berridge, 1980; Berridge and Irvine, 1984; Abdel-Latif, 1986; Fogg *et al.*, 1989). Active peptides with DH activity have been partially purified and characterized for some insect species: *Locusta migratoria* (Proux *et al.*, 1988; Schooley *et al.*, 1987), *Manduca sexta* (Kataoka *et al.*, 1989; Blackburn *et al.*, 1991; Audsley *et al.*, 1993), *Acheta* and *Periplaneta* (Kay *et al.*, 1991; 1992), *Rhodnius prolixus* (Aston
1979) and *Formica polyctena* (Dedecker *et al.*, 1993; 1994). The differing characteristics of DH in those species suggested that there are several forms of this hormone involved in the control of primary urine production.

The electrophysiological properties of the basolateral and apical membranes have been reported by Fogg *et al.*, (1989). Corpora cardiaca extract was reported to cause a small hyperpolarisation of the basal membrane potential ($V_B$), whereas cAMP did not effect $V_B$. If hormonal stimulation activated $K^+$ entry via the co-transporter (Na/K/2Cl) alone then no effect should be observed on $V_B$ as the basal co-transporter is electroneutral. However, stimulation of the electrogenic Na$^+$/K$^+$-ATPase would be consistent with the effect of CC extract on $V_B$.

Fogg *et al.*, (1989) also have reported that cAMP and CC extract have different effects on the apical membrane potential ($V_A$). cAMP causes a hyperpolarisation of $V_A$ that would be consistent with a net extrusion of cations. A likely candidate would be via stimulation of the V-type ATPase. The fact that CC extract causes a depolarisation indicates that other second messenger systems (IP$_3$/Ca) activate a different membrane function that results in an increased anion permeability. This latter effect must outweigh the proposed stimulation of the V-type ATPase involving the cAMP arm of the second messenger system.

Other workers have drawn similar conclusions from work on Malpighian tubules of other insects. For example, Nicolson and Isaacson (1987) concluded, from studies on $V_A$ and transepithelial potential (TEP) in tubules of *Onymacris plana*, that DH effected changes in TEP as a consequence of changes in $V_A$. O'Donnell and Maddrell (1984) and O'Donnell *et al.*, (1996) showed that, in *Rhodnius prolixus*, and *Drosophila*...
melanogaster respectively, the changes in TEP due to the action of 5-HT represented events at the apical membrane.

These various studies on the effect of hormones and hormone analogues on the membrane potentials of Malpighian tubule cells clearly identifies their physiological effects on fluid secretion as operating via the modulation of ion channels and /or transporters. This hormone stimulation operates through the release of intracellular second messengers (Berridge, 1980; Fogg et al., 1990).

Recently, considerable interest has been shown in a group of second messenger molecules derived from membrane phosphoinositides (see review by Berridge and Irvine, 1989). Appropriate receptor stimulation triggers phospholipase C (PLC, otherwise known as phosphoinositidase C) cleavage of membrane phosphatidylinositol 4,5-bisphosphate (PIP2) to yield two second messenger molecules, inositol 1,4,5-triphosphate (Ins-1,4,5-P_3) and sn-1,2-diacylglycerol (DAG); the latter being an activator of protein kinase C (Nishizuka, 1984). There is now general agreement that Ins-1,4,5-P_3 induces the release of Ca^{2+} from the endoplasmic reticulum (Berridge and Irvine, 1984; Abdel-Latif, 1986; Berridge, 1986) and thus triggers the biological response to 'calcium-mobilizing' hormones and neurotransmitters. Berridge (1986) reported that Ins-1,4,5-P_3 was generated by activation of the 5-HT_1 receptor in Calliphora salivary glands, the receptor which appeared responsible for mobilization of intracellular Ca^{2+} (Berridge et al., 1984). Fogg et al., (1990) demonstrated the rapid generation of both intracellular cAMP and Ins-1,4,5-P_3 by the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria in response to crude CC extracts with diuretic activity.

It has been suggested that increased levels of the second messengers, cAMP and Ca^{2+}, effect increased ion and fluid secretion (Berridge, 1980). In Calliphora cAMP is
thought to stimulate an apical cation pump whereas calcium increases anion conductance across both the basal and apical cell membranes (Berridge and Prince, 1972b; Berridge et al., 1975a). Morgan and Mordue (1984) proposed a similar model for the hormonal control of fluid and ion secretion by the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria in which two spatially distinct receptors exist on the surface of the tubule cells; one which activates adenylate cyclase (R1) to increase cAMP synthesis and another (R2) which triggers a different cellular event, possibly increasing intracellular Ca^{2+}. These second messengers will of course exert their effects via the activation of protein kinases, which together with protein phosphatases, regulate the phosphorylation status of target proteins, and as a consequence the regulation of their activities.

In Malpighian tubules, fluid movement is coupled to the active transport of K^+ and/or Na^+, with Cl^- as the major counterion (Nicolson, 1993). Diuretic peptides increase tubule secretion by stimulating ion transport, and there is no evidence of a change in the osmotic permeability of the epithelium (Nicolson, 1993). In the present study, it is of interest that the composition of the secreted fluid was not significantly changed during stimulation by cAMP. However, CC extract significantly increased secreted [Na^+] from 41.2 to 59.3mM (p<0.0001) and decreased secreted [K^+] from 126.8 to 107.2mM (p<0.002), leaving the total monovalent cation concentration unchanged (166.5mM) from that of unstimulated tubules (168mM). The Na^+/K^+ ratio was also significantly increased from 0.31 to 0.54 during stimulation with CC extract (p<0.0001). Results in Table 3.5 show that CC extract effects an increase in both Na^+ flux (184%) and K^+ flux (67%) compared with the unstimulated tubules. However, cAMP caused smaller increase in Na^+ flux and K^+ flux (46%) and (51%) respectively. These data agree with those reported by Fogg (1990) and Fogg et al., (1993).
The increased efflux of both $\text{Na}^+$ and $\text{K}^+$ at the apical surface implies that influx of these ions must be increased at the basal surface. The most obvious mechanism would be by activation of the $\text{Na}^+$/K$^+$/2Cl$^-$ co-transporter. Stimulation by cAMP did not affect $V_B$ (Fogg et al., 1989) and so it is possible that the co-transporter is activated via protein kinase A. Corpora cardiaca extract does cause $V_B$ hyperpolarisation and it is possible that this results from activation of the $\text{Na}^+$/K$^+$-ATPase by a non-cAMP dependent process, presumably via IP$_3$ and Ca$^{2+}$. Activation of this enzyme would help maintain the Na$^+$ gradient whilst supplying increased K$^+$ for secretion at the apical surface.

Ouabain (a specific inhibitor of the $\text{Na}^+$/K$^+$-ATPase, Skou, 1969) inhibited fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta* (Anstee and Bell, 1975; Anstee et al., 1979; Anstee et al., 1980; Donkin and Anstee, 1980; Anstee et al., 1986; Fogg, 1990; Fogg et al., 1991). Ouabain inhibition of fluid secretion was accompanied by increased [Na$^+$]$_i$ and decreased [K$^+$]$_i$ (Pivovarova et al., 1994b); it is significant that Marshall (1995) reported increased levels of Na$^+$ in the "urine". There is evidence from other tissues that Na$^+$/K$^+$-ATPase activity is modulated by protein kinase activity. Bertorello et al. (1991) reported that both PKA and PKC can phosphorylate the catalytic subunit of purified shark rectal gland Na$^+$/K$^+$-ATPase *in vitro* and that both kinases inhibited Na$^+$/K$^+$-ATPase activity of a partially purified preparation from rat renal cortex (Aperia et al., 1987; Satoh et al., 1993). Another possibility is that both kinases interact, directly or through intermediate steps, with other mediators that participate in the signaling cascade in kidney cells, e.g., phospholipase A2 (Hirata, 1981; Nishizuka, 1992; Satoh et al., 1993). These observations could support the present study, where fluid and ion secretion of Malpighian tubules is inhibited by PKA and PKC inhibitors. It has been suggested that pump regulation in this region of the vertebrate nephron is mediated
by the phospholipase C-protein kinase C pathway (Bertorello and Aperia, 1988; Chen et al., 1993; Satoh et al., 1993). Ominato et al., (1996) proposed that short-term regulation of proximal tubule Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity by dopamine and parathyroid hormone occurs via the PLC-PKC signal transduction pathway, which may interact with the pump rather than alter sodium access to it. It has also been reported that PKC-induced phosphorylation of the catalytic subunit of the renal tubular basolateral membrane-bound Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase inhibits the activity of the pump (Bertorello et al., 1991; Lowndes et al., 1990).

It is possible that fluid production would require activation of the Na⁺/K⁺/2Cl⁻ cotransporter to support the stimulated rate. Little work has been carried out on this co-transporter from insect tissues but there are reports that phosphorylation through protein kinase A stimulates, whereas phosphorylation through protein kinase C inhibits the co-transporter (Kaplan et al., 1996). Hegarty et al., (1991) have demonstrated that the bumetamide sensitive Na⁺/K⁺/2Cl⁻ co-transporter is stimulated by exogenous cAMP. The present data showing that cAMP alone can stimulate fluid secretion appreciably (50%) would support activation of the co-transporter via PKA. cAMP stimulates fluid production and Na⁺ and K⁺ efflux but also causes hyperpolarisation of Vₐ. This suggests activation of the V-type ATPase, which would steepen the H⁺ gradient so increasing the rate of efflux of both Na⁺ and K⁺ through the counter transporter(s). The hyperpolarisation effect suggests that, in this situation, the efflux of Cl⁻ does not match the net H⁺ together with the K⁺ and Na⁺ efflux. This is consistent with the observation in our laboratory that the amount of chloride present in the cells increased dramatically during stimulation with cAMP (Hopkin, personal communication) implying net Cl⁻ retention during active stimulated secretion. Corpora cardiaca extract doubles the rate of fluid secretion and also changes the Na⁺/K⁺ ratio of the fluid produced (Table 3.1 and
Figure 3.7), co-incident with this is a depolarisation of $V_A$ (Fogg et al., 1989). There is a clear differential activation of Na\(^{+}\) secretion (187%) as compared with K\(^{+}\) secretion (67%). The differential effect of CC extract and cAMP at the apical surface suggests that a non-cAMP factor, caused by CC extract stimulation, is also operating to modify ion movements. The increased Na\(^{+}\) and K\(^{+}\) efflux could be driven by stimulation of the V-type ATPase as argued above. However, anion permeability must also be stimulated, presumably via IP\(_3\) and/or Ca\(^{2+}\) stimulation via protein kinase C. The activity of the Me/H\(^{+}\) counter transporters must also be differentially affected because of the changed ratio of Na\(^{+}\)/K\(^{+}\) extruded.

Chelerythrine and staurosporine are specific inhibitors of protein kinase C. The effect of these inhibitors on ion transport by Malpighian tubule cells of *Locusta migratoria* has not previously been reported. The data present in Tables 3.2, 3.6, and 3.8 show that both inhibit fluid production and interestingly significantly reduce the [K\(^{+}\)] of the secreted fluid (from 125 to 108mM), without affecting its [Na\(^{+}\)]. The inhibition of fluid production in unstimulated tubules by protein kinase C inhibitors may operate via an effect on anion permeability at the apical surface, as well as from effects at the basal surface, presumably by inhibition of the Na\(^{+}\)/K\(^{+}\)-ATPase (Satoh et al., 1993). The effects of both staurosporine and chelerythrine on the composition of the secreted fluid also indicate a role for PKC activation/inhibition of the Me/H\(^{+}\) counter transporters, which either differentially inhibits K\(^{+}\) extrusion in a binary system or changes Na\(^{+}\)/K\(^{+}\) affinities in a unitary system.

In the present study the rate of fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* was significantly inhibited by Rp-cAMP over the concentration range 1\(\mu\)M to 1mM (~35% inhibition at 0.1mM Rp-cAMP). Rp-cAMP has been reported as a specific inhibitor for PKA (Rothermel et al., 1984; Ricter-Landsberg and Jastorff,
The inhibition effect of Rp-cAMP on fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules emphasizes a role for PKA in the regulation of the secretory process.

In unstimulated Malpighian tubules Rp-cAMP also caused a significant fall in the $[\text{Na}^+]$ and rise in $[\text{K}^+]$ of the secreted fluid. The fall in secretion rate could result from effects on transporters at both apical and basal surfaces, the likely candidates are inhibition of the V-type ATPase and the $\text{Na}^+/\text{K}^+/2\text{Cl}^-$ co-transporter respectively. However, this would not explain the effect on ion composition of the secreted fluid, which would suggest an additional effect on the apical Me/$\text{H}^+$ counter transporter(s). There is evidence from studies on vertebrate proximal tubule cells that the $\text{Na}^+/\text{H}^+$ exchanger is inhibited by an increase in cAMP (Felder et al., 1990; Satoh et al., 1993).

In those tubules stimulated with CC extract, it is notable that stimulation of fluid secretion and an increase in "urine" Na$^+$ concentration occurred in the presence of PKC inhibitors, but without further associated reduction in K$^+$ concentration (Tables 3.6 and 3.8). CC extract in the presence of staurosporine or chelerythrine caused a further significant increase in the $\text{Na}^+/\text{K}^+$ ratio which resulted from an increase in $[\text{Na}^+]$. This suggests that CC extract separately affects K$^+$ and Na$^+$ extrusion and that elevation of $[\text{Na}^+]$ in the secreted fluid results from activation of the $\text{Na}^+/\text{H}^+$ antiporter by PKA. Stimulation with cAMP could not be consistently demonstrated in the presence of PKC inhibitors, nor did cAMP restore the $\text{Na}^+/\text{K}^+$ ratio in the secreted fluid. This demonstrates the critical role that PKC activation has in K$^+$ extrusion at the apical surface. CC extract in the presence Rp-cAMP was able to restore $[\text{Na}^+]$ of the secreted fluid to the control value without effect on $[\text{K}^+]$. Thus, the decrease in the $\text{Na}^+/\text{K}^+$ ratio, in the presence Rp-cAMP alone, was reversed by the addition CC extract. This effect was evident even though CC extract did not increase fluid secretion in the presence of Rp-cAMP. In Rp-cAMP inhibited tubules, cAMP is able to restore $[\text{Na}^+]$ of the
secreted fluid to control tubule values without lowering the [K+] of the fluid to control levels. Therefore, cAMP in the presence of Rp-cAMP was able to increase the Na+/K+ ratio. In addition, Table 3.11 shows that Rp-cAMP decreased Na+ flux and K+ flux by ~53% and 28% respectively. However, this decrease was not reversed by addition of CC or cAMP to the medium containing Rp-cAMP.

These data also support the suggestion made by Pivovarova et al. (1994a,b) that the extrusion of K+ and Na+ may occur via separate transporters. Those workers showed that the Na+ and K+ composition of the secreted fluid was not markedly altered by conditions that dramatically lowered [K+], and raised [Na+]. In locust Malpighian tubule cells therefore it is unlikely that Na+ and K+ are competing at the same exit route. Thus the changes in ionic composition of the secreted fluid reported here, caused by PKA and PKC inhibitors and CC extract, strongly suggest that the activity or Me+ affinity of the transporters is determined by phosphorylation state of either or both transporters. The complexity of this process is underlined by the inhibition of fluid production by okadaic acid showing that protein phosphorylation state can be inhibiting as well as stimulatory. In summary, the inhibition of fluid secretion by the specific inhibitors of PKA and PKC indicates that these protein kinases are involved in fluid secretion process. Also, the effect of protein kinases inhibitors on the ionic composition of the fluid secreted and Na+/K+ ratios in the presence and absence CC extract or cAMP leads to the suggestion that both PKA and PKC play a role in ion transport across the basal or apical cell membranes (or both) of the Malpighian tubule cells of *Locusta migratoria* in response to DH.
CHAPTER 4
Biochemical studies on the subcellular distribution of the enzyme activities in Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria.

INTRODUCTION

Cell fractionation has played an important role in our understanding of cellular processes and membrane biochemistry in both vertebrates and invertebrates. In the past, insect membranes in particular have received relatively little attention, despite the importance of insects as agricultural pests and vectors of disease (Burges, 1981; Harvey, 1982). One of the major difficulties encountered in studies on insect membranes was the small amount of tissue that was usually available to insect biochemists (Terra, 1988; 1990).

Several methods have been developed in the past to isolate brush border membrane vesicles (BBMV) from kidney cortex (Berger and Sacktor, 1970; Quirk and Robison, 1972; George, and Kenny, 1973; Booth and Kenny, 1974; Kessler et al., 1978; Biber et al., 1981; Briskin et al., 1987). Most of these methods were based on a differential centrifugation following addition of 10-20mM CaCl₂ or MgCl₂ to the initial homogenate. By these procedures, BBMV could obtained, which were 10-15 fold enriched as indicated by brush border marker enzymes (e.g., alkaline phosphatase), although the yield of these enzymes was only about 5-20% of the amount present in the initial homogenate (Booth and Kenny, 1974; Biber et al., 1981). However, the first attempts at fractionation of the midgut of Manduca sexta (Cioffi, 1979) quickly revealed that the methods which had been successfully used to isolate plasma membranes from vertebrate tissues could not be applied to insect tissues, perhaps
because of difference in cell structure or tissue organization (Berridge and Oschman, 1972). It, therefore, became necessary to devise procedures which would allow the isolation of plasma membranes from an insect epithelium, and which would provide a reasonable yield of material in a condition suitable for biochemical analysis. Ferreira and Terra (1980), identified alkaline phosphatase and other enzymes as present in midgut microvilli of *Rhynchosciara americana* based on the following criteria:

(a) Presence of most of the enzyme activity in the fraction displaying brush border characteristics under the phase contrast microscopy.

(b) Increase in the specific activity of the enzymes, in relation to the original homogenates, in the microvilli fraction obtained by the differential calcium (or magnesium) precipitation method (Schmitz et al., 1973).

Several methods have been used to prepare brush border microvilli from invertebrate epithelia. One of these, relied on differential calcium precipitation to purify the microvilli from the columnar cells of the midgut tissue (composed of columnar and goblet cells) of *Philosamia cynthia* larvae (Hanozet et al., 1980). Minor modifications of the procedure of Schmitz et al., (1973) have been used in the preparation of midgut cell microvilli from different insects such as the mosquito *Culex tarsalis* (Houk et al., 1986), and the beetles *Pheropsophus aequinoctialis* (Ferreira and Terra 1989) and *Tenebrio molitor* (Ferreira et al., 1990). The microvillar enzymes in these preparations usually were enriched 5-10 fold with yields of 20-30%.

Brush border microvilli have been prepared from freshly isolated posterior larval *Manduca sexta* midguts (Eisen et al., 1989) by three methods (e.g. differential calcium precipitation, differential magnesium precipitation, and differential
ultrasonication). Comparison of results showed that the yield of BBMV by both differential precipitation methods were 5-6 times greater than that by the differential ultrasonication method. Although alkaline phosphatase, γ-glutamyltransferase, and aminopeptidase enrichments of the BBMV marker enzymes were similar in all preparations.

Fogg et al., (1990) used a modified technique of Rodriguez and Edelman (1979) in an attempt to separate, and partially purify, the basal and apical cell membranes of Malpighian tubules of Locusta. Alkaline phosphatase, Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase and succinate dehydrogenase activities were used as marker enzymes for apical, basal and mitochondria enriched-membrane fractions respectively. Results revealed that the apical rich-membrane fractions were not totally free from Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase and succinate dehydrogenase activities.

The method used in this study was a modification of that reported by Fogg (1991) which gave greater purity and less mitochondrial contamination of the apical membrane fractions of Malpighian tubules cells of Locusta migratoria.
Chapter 4

MATERIALS AND METHODS

Membrane Separation for Subsequent Marker Enzyme Assays:

The method employed was a modification of that described by Rodriguez and Edelman (1979) and Fogg et al., (1991). Unless otherwise stated, pellets were resuspended and rehomogenized in a known volume of homogenization medium (5mM imidazole-HCl buffer, pH 7.5, containing 250mM sucrose). The method is summarized in Figure 4.1. All steps were carried out at 4°C.

Preparation of the Malpighian tubules:

Approximately equal numbers of mature male and female locusts were used throughout. Animals were killed by decapitation and their Malpighian tubules quickly dissected out and placed ice-cold homogenization medium. Tubules from approximately 15 locusts were added to 10ml of homogenization medium. Homogenization was carried out in a glass homogenizer with a Teflon pestle (clearance 0.1-0.15mm) with twenty passes of the plunger at 1000 rev/min. The homogenization tube was surrounded by ice throughout this procedure as described by Anstee and Fathpour (1979).

The resulting homogenate was centrifuged at 600g for 10 min using a Beckman, J2-HS centrifuge. This pellet was then resuspended and the process repeated. All subsequent centrifugations were carried out using a Beckman J2-HS centrifuge and unless otherwise stated, the 8 x 50 ml fixed angle aluminium rotor was used. The (S1) obtained from the previous centrifugation was subsequently diluted
Figure 4.1 Flow diagram to illustrate the centrifugation steps used in membrane separation.

Homogenate centrifuged at 600g for 10 min

- **Pellet 1 retained** (P1)

Supernatant 1 centrifuged at 15,000g for 20 min

- **Supernatant 1 retained** (S1)
  - **Pellet 2 (Mitochondria-rich) retained** (P2)

Supernatant 2 centrifuged at 100,000g for 60 min

- **Supernatant 2 retained** (S2)
  - **Pellet 3 resuspended and rehomogenized in 10ml and made-up to 30ml using homogenization medium with 1M MgCl₂ added to give a final concentration 10mM MgCl₂. After 20 min on ice, homogenate was centrifuged at 10,000g for 15 min.**

Pellet 3

- **Pellet 4 (Basal membrane-rich fraction) retained** (P4)

Supernatant 4 centrifuged at 55,000g for 30 min

- **Supernatant 4 retained** (S4)

Supernatant 5 centrifuged at 100,000g for 60 min

- **Supernatant 5 retained** (S5)

Pellet 5

- **Pellet 5 (Apical membrane-rich fraction) retained** (P5)
with homogenization medium (1:1) and centrifuged at 15,000g for 20 min. This resulted in the production of a mitochondria-rich pellet (P2). The supernatant (S2) produced by this centrifugation was then recentrifuged at 100,000g for 60 min and the pellet obtained (P3) resuspended and rehomogenized in 10ml of homogenization medium which was then was diluted 3-fold with homogenization medium containing 1M MgCl₂ to give a final concentration of 10mM MgCl₂. This was then left to stand on ice for 20 min. The resuspended P3 was then centrifuged at 10,000g for 15 min. The resulting supernatant (S4) was then centrifuged at 55,000g for 30 min. The pellet (P5) resulting from this spin represents the apical membrane-rich fraction (Rodriguez and Edelman, 1979; Fogg et al., 1991). This pellet was resuspended by homogenization in a known volume of deionized water. All steps were carried out at 4°C.

**Preparation of Pellets for Electron Microscopy:**

Pellets obtained from centrifugation were prepared for electron microscopy as described previously for non-treated Malpighian tubules using Karnovsky's fixative (Karnovsky, 1965), which is composed of:

**Solution A:**

- Paraformaldehyde 2g
- Distilled water 40ml
- NaOH 2-6 drops

**Solution B:**

- 25% Gluteraldehyde 10ml
- 0.2M Sodium Cacodylate buffer, pH 7.3 50ml
Solution A and B were mixed in a 1:1 ratio just prior to use. After fixing for 1-1.5 hours on ice, material was post-fixed with 1% osmium tetroxide in 0.1M sodium cacodylate buffer (pH 7.5) for 1hr, on ice. Following post-fixation, the tubules were treated to the following steps:

1. Dehydration through a graded series of alcohol, on ice
   
   (i) 15 min in 70% alcohol, with 3 changes.
   
   (ii) 15 min in 95% alcohol, with 3 changes.
   
   (iii) 15 min in absolute alcohol, with 3 changes.

2. 30 min in absolute alcohol / propylene oxide in 1:1 ratio, on ice, with 3 changes.

3. 30 min in propylene oxide, with 3 changes on ice.

4. 30 min in propylene oxide/Araldite (Araldite CY 212 10ml, DDSA 10ml, dibutyryl phthalate 1ml, DMP 30 0.5ml) in 1:1 ratio at 45 °C.

5. 30 min in Araldite alone at 45 °C.


7. Preparation moved from 45 °C to 60 °C for a further 24 hours.

Silver/silver-gold sections were cut on a Reichart NK microtome using glass knives. Sections were then expanded using chloroform and collected on Formvar coated copper grids. The sections were then stained in uranyl acetate (1% solution in 70% alcohol) followed by lead citrate (Reynolds, 1963) prior to their examination in a Phillips EM 400T electron microscope.
Assay of ATPase activity and analysis of inorganic phosphate (P_i): 

Appropriate incubation media consisting of 0.25ml ionic medium and 0.125ml of membrane homogenate (0.05-0.1mg protein/ml), unless otherwise were thermoequilibrated at 35 ± 0.1 °C for 15 min in Eppendorf tubes in a water bath. Reactions were started by adding 0.125ml 12mM ATP (Tris salt) and incubations were carried out at 35 ± 0.1 °C for 30 min, at the end of this time reactions were stopped by the addition of 1 ml of a 1:1 mixture of 1% Lubrol and 1% ammonium molybdate in 0.9M sulphuric acid (Atkinson et al., 1973). Tubes were then allowed to stand at room temperature for 10 min to allow the yellow colour to develop. Controls were used in each experiment to determine the extent of non-enzymatic hydrolysis of ATP.

Following centrifugation at 10,000 rpm for 10 min in a Beckman, Avanti-30 centrifuge at 4°C, to spin down any protein that may have precipitated, the inorganic phosphate released was determined by measuring at 390nm in a Ultraspec 4050 spectrophotometer, the amount of inorganic phosphate (P_i) released, which was proportional to the yellow colour, was determined by reference to a standard calibration curve Figure 4.2. The latter was produced using a stock solution of 0.6mM Na_2HPO_4 which was serially diluted to give a concentration range of 0-0.6mM. To 2ml of each concentration, 4ml of the 1:1 Lubrol/acid molybdate was added, this was left to stand at room temperature for 10 min and read at 390nm.
Figure 4.2

Standard calibration curve for the determination of inorganic phosphate.

**Ordinate:** Absorbance at 390nm.

**Abscissa:** Inorganic phosphate (P$_i$) in nmoles.
Standard calibration curve for the determination of inorganic phosphate used in the assay of ATPases activity
**Determination of Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase activity:**

Incubations were carried out as described previously. The reaction media had the following final concentration of ions, unless otherwise stated:

**Medium i)**  4mM MgCl\(_2\) in 20mM imidazole buffer.

**Medium ii)** medium (i) plus 1mM ouabain.

**Medium iii)** medium (i) plus 100mM NaCl and 20mM KCl.

**Medium iv)** medium (iii) plus 1mM ouabain, all at pH 7.2.

The amount of P\(_i\) released from ATP hydrolysis was measured as described previously. Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase activity was determined as the difference in P\(_i\) liberated in reaction medium (iii), containing Mg\(^2+\), Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\), and that released in medium (iv), containing Mg\(^2+\), Na\(^+\) and K\(^+\) and ouabain. Controls were run where ATP was not added until the reaction had been stopped to determine the extent of non-enzymatic hydrolysis. Activity was expressed in nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).

**Estimation of Mg\(^2+\)-ATPase Activity:**

Mg\(^2+\)-ATPase activity was determined as the difference in P\(_i\) liberated in the reaction medium (ii) containing Mg\(^2+\) plus 1mM ouabain and that released non-enzymatically in the controls.

**Determination of Alkaline Phosphatase Activity:**

Alkaline phosphatase activity of the various membrane fractions, produced as described previously, was determined using the method described by Bowers and McComb (1966) with slight modification. Reaction media, consisting of 1ml buffered substrate (1mM MgCl\(_2\) and 25mM p-nitrophenyl phosphate in Sigma 221 buffer,
Chapter 4 Materials and Methods

pH 10.3) and 0.5ml deionized water, were thermoequilibrated at 35 ± 0.1 °C for 15 min. The reaction was started by the addition of 0.5ml membrane homogenate. Changes in absorbance at 420nm were measured at 5 min intervals, over a 20 min period using an Ultraspec 4050 spectrophotometer. Controls were run in parallel in which 0.5ml deionized water replaced the 0.5ml homogenate.

The observed changes in absorbancy were converted to nmoles p-nitrophenol (NP) liberated by reference to a standard p-nitrophenol curve (Figure 4.3) prepared by serial dilution from a 2mM NP stock solution, to give a concentration of 0-800 nmoles NP/ml. To 2ml of each concentration 3ml of 2M tris-buffer solution were added. Each mixture was left to stand for 10 min at room temperature and the absorbance read at 420nm.

Determination of Succinate Dehydrogenase Activity:

The succinate dehydrogenase (SDH) activity of the various membrane fractions, prepared as described previously, were determined using the method described by King (1967) with slight modification.

SDH can catalyze the oxidation of succinate in the presence of certain artificial electron acceptors. The determination of SDH activity is based on this property. The artificial electron acceptor used in the present study was ferricyanide. In the presence of sodium succinate, ferricyanide is converted to ferrocyanide, and succinate to fumarate. The overall reaction according to Singer and Kearney (1967) is:

\[
\text{succinate} + 2 \text{ferricyanide} \rightarrow \text{fumarate} + 2 \text{ferrocyanide} + 2\text{H}^+ 
\]

The rate of decrease in absorbance at 420nm, due to ferricyanide reduction by succinate, is used as a measure of the enzyme activity.
Figure 4.3

Standard calibration curve for the determination of $p$-Nitrophenol (NP).

**Ordinate:** Absorbance at 420nm.

**Abscissa:** $p$-Nitrophenol (NP) in nmoles.
Standard calibration curve for the determination of p-nitrophenol used in the assay of alkaline phosphatase activity.
Reaction media were thermoequilibrated in polypropylene tubes at 35 ± 0.1°C for 15 min. These consisted of 1.5ml of 0.2M phosphate buffer (pH 7.8), 0.2 ml of 0.6M sodium succinate, 0.3ml of 1% BSA, 0.1ml of 0.03M potassium ferricyanide (freshly prepared) and 0.5ml deionized water. Reactions were started by addition of 0.5ml membrane homogenate. Changes in absorbance at 420nm were measured at 5 intervals min, over a 20 min period using an Ultraspec 4050 spectrophotometer. Controls were run in parallel in which 0.5ml deionized water replaced the 0.5ml homogenate.

The observed changes in absorbance were converted to units of mmoles succinate oxidized, as described by King (1967), i.e., 0.485 x change in absorbance at 420 nm. The specific activity was expressed as nmoles succinate oxidized/mg protein/min.

**Estimation of Protein:**

The method employed was essentially the same as that described by Lowry *et al.*, (1951) using bovine serum albumin (BSA) Fraction V as Standard Reagents:

1. 2% Na₂CO₃
2. 0.5% CuSO₄
3. 1% KNa Tartrate

**Folin Solution A:**

Prepared by mixing equal volumes of solution (2) and (3) and to each volume of this mixture adding 50 volumes of solution (1).
**Folin Solution B:**

Prepared by diluting 4 volumes of Folin Ciocalteaus phenol reagent with 6 volumes of deionised water.

**Method:**

Bovine serum albumin fraction V was serially diluted to give concentrations of 0.4, 0.3, 0.2, 0.1, 0.05, and 0 mg protein/ml. 3 ml of Folin Solution (A) were added to 0.2 ml of protein solution and this allowed to stand for 30 min at room temperature. 0.3 ml of Folin Solution (B) was then added to each tube and the resulting solutions allowed to stand for a further 40 min at room temperature. The absorbance was measured at 500 nm. A standard calibration graph of protein concentration against absorbance was constructed. From this curve the amount of protein in the unknowns could be determined. A new calibration curve was prepared each time an assay was carried out. A typical standard protein calibration curve is shown in Figure 4.4.

**Preparation of 12 mM Tris ATP:**

The disodium salt of ATP was converted into Tris ATP by using an ion exchange Dowex 50-X8 resin (H\(^+\) form) according to Schwartz et al., (1962) and Anstee and Bowler (1984). 100 mg Dowex resin was first mixed well with 800 ml 5% HCl for 30 min. The resin was then washed with several changes of deionized water in a Buchner funnel until the effluent had a pH between 3 and 4. At this stage all the residual acid was removed from the resin and it was in its charged (H\(^+\)) form. It was resuspended in its volume of deionized water and stored at pH 3-4, at room temperature, until required. When required, a vertically held 5 ml "Volac" glass pipette
Figure 4.4

Standard calibration curve for determination of protein using bovine serum albumen (BSA) Fraction V as standard (typical example).

Ordinate: Absorbance at 500nm.

Abscissa: Protein mg/ml.
Figure 4.3

A typical example of a standard protein calibration curve using bovine serum albumen fraction V as standard.
was packed with resin using a wide mouthed Pasteur pipette. The level of fluid was kept above that of the resin at all times to prevent drying. Air pockets were dislodged with a plunger. Glass wool placed inside the pipette, at its base, prevented the loss of Dowex resin from the column, but allowed the passage of fluids. A silicon tube connected to the base of the column, and a “pinch-clip”, enabled the flow of fluid from the column to be controlled.

The packed column of resin was then washed with deionized water until the effluent colouration disappeared and its pH was about 7.

A known amount of disodium ATP dissolved in about 15ml deionized water and then slowly passed down the column and collected in an acid-washed beaker. The solution was repassed down the column a further 2 times. Then deionized water was passed through the beads and collected in the same beaker until the collected volume was about 20 ml less than that required. The effluent collected in the beaker was ATP in its H⁺ form. This was converted to Tris salt by the addition of 2M Tris until the pH was 7.2. It was then made up to the volume required with deionized water and stored in aliquots at -20°C. The weight of the ATP (sodium salt) taken was that previously calculated to give the required concentration in the final volume.
Biochemical studies on the subcellular distribution of the enzyme activities from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

**Use of marker enzyme activity assays to localize membrane fractions:**

Enzyme activity assays were carried out, in order to determine the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase, Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase, alkaline phosphatase and succinate dehydrogenase (SDH) activities within each pellet and supernatant obtained during the differential separation procedure (summary of membrane separation Figure 4.1). Their subcellular localization could then be deduced reference to the enzyme activity of basal cell membrane marker (Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase), apical cell membrane marker (alkaline phosphatase) and the mitochondrial membrane marker (SDH).

**Distribution of Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase:**

Results obtained from five independent preparations are shown in Figure 4.5 and Appendix 3, Table 3.1. It can be seen that the major activity of Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase was confined to the microsomal membrane fraction pellets (P$_3$ and P$_4$), with maximal mean specific activity (331.9±11.9 nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$) being observed in P$_4$. This would suggest that the majority of Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase was precipitated in P$_4$ at 10,000g. However, pellet P$_5$ and the supernatants (S$_1$, S$_2$, S$_3$ and S$_5$) contained low Na$^{+}$/K$^{+}$-ATPase activity.

**Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase:**

Previous studies have demonstrated Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase activity in microsomal preparations from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* (Anstee and
Figure 4.5

Measurements of Mg\textsuperscript{2+}-ATPase and Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase activities in the various membrane fractions obtained from the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

**Ordinate:** ATPases activity expressed as nmoles $P_i$ liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}.

**Abscissa:** Membrane fractions.

- $H =$ Crude Malpighian tubules homogenate.
- $P_1 =$ Crude membrane pellet produced after 600g spin for 10min.
- $P_2 =$ Pellet produced after 15,000g spin for 20min (mitochondria-enriched pellet).
- $P_3 =$ Pellet produced after 100,000g spin for 60min (basal and apical membrane-enriched pellet).
- $P_4 =$ Pellet produced after 10,000g spin for 15min (basal membrane-enriched pellet).
- $P_5 =$ Pellet produced after 55,000g spin for 30min (apical membrane-enriched pellet).
- $S =$ Supernatants.
ATPase activity (n moles P_i/mg protein/min)

Membrane fractions

- Mg^{2+}-ATPase activity
- Mg^{2+}-dependent Na^+, K^+-stimulated ATPase activity (Total)
- Na^+, K^+-stimulated ATPase activity
Bell, 1975; 1978; Fogg, 1990; Fogg et al., 1991). Results of the present study as shown in Figure 4.5 revealed high levels of Mg\textsuperscript{2+}-dependent ATPase activity in P\textsubscript{3}, P\textsubscript{4} and P\textsubscript{5}, with relatively low levels of activity being observed in P\textsubscript{2} (see also Appendix 3, Table 3.1).

**Alkaline phosphatase:**

The distribution of alkaline phosphatase activity was examined as described previously by cytochemical localization studies and found to be confined to the microvillar surface of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* (Fogg, 1990). In the present study examination of data in Figure 4.6 and Appendix 3, Table 3.2 reveals that the majority of alkaline phosphatase activity was associated with P\textsubscript{5}, with relatively low activity observed in P\textsubscript{3} and P\textsubscript{4}. Thus, the ratio of Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase activity (expressed in nmoles P\textsubscript{i} liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}) to alkaline phosphatase activity (expressed in nmoles p-nitrophenol liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}) was 1:1.6 in P\textsubscript{4} and 1:144.7 in P\textsubscript{5}. The differential separation of Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase and alkaline phosphatase indicated that the P\textsubscript{3} was successfully separated to produced enriched apical (P\textsubscript{5}) and basal (P\textsubscript{4}) membrane fractions.

**Succinate dehydrogenase (SDH):**

Data in Figure 4.7 and Appendix 3, Table 3.2 reveals that the mean specific activity of SDH present in P\textsubscript{2} was 287.2 ± 29.2 nmoles ferricyanide reduced/mg protein/min, and that significant levels of activities were also present in P\textsubscript{1}, P\textsubscript{3} and P\textsubscript{4}. In contrast, the apical membrane-enriched fraction (P\textsubscript{5}) contained very little SDH activity suggesting minimal mitochondrial contamination.
Figure 4.6

Measurements of alkaline phosphatase activity in the various membrane fractions obtained from the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*

**Ordinate:** Alkaline phosphatase activity expressed as nmoles $p$-nitrophenol liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$.

**Abscissa:** Membrane fractions see Figure 4.5.
Membrane Fractions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>H</th>
<th>P1</th>
<th>S1</th>
<th>P2</th>
<th>S2</th>
<th>P3</th>
<th>S3</th>
<th>P4</th>
<th>P5</th>
<th>S5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4500</td>
<td>4000</td>
<td>3500</td>
<td>3000</td>
<td>2500</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>1500</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

mmoles p-nitrophenol liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}
Figure 4.7

Measurements of succinate dehydrogenase activity in the various membrane fractions obtained from the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

**Ordinate:** Succinate dehydrogenase activity expressed as nmoles succinate oxidized mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$.

**Abscissa:** Membrane fractions see Figure 4.5.
Electron microscopic study of membrane pellets produced by differential separation of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*:

Electron microscopical studies were carried out on the pellets of the different membrane fractions in order to determine their contents.

Pellets (P₂, P₃, P₄ and P₅) were prepared and fixed for electron microscopy as described previously. A series of representative electronmicrographs of sections through these pellets is shown in Plates (4.1, 4.2, 4.3 and 4.4).

It can be seen that P₂ (Plate 4.1 a, b) contained numerous mitochondria. This is consistent with the biochemical distribution study of SDH activity.

P₃ (Plate 4.2 a, b) consisted of a mixture of large and small membrane bound vesicles, and from biochemical studies this pellet represented a mixture of both basal and apical membrane fractions.

A variety of vesicles of different sizes were present in P₄ (Plate 4.3 a, b) together with numerous of mitochondria being observed. P₅ consisted mainly of a large number of small vesicles (Plate 4.4 a, b) with no obvious mitochondrial contamination. The micrographs of P₄ and P₅ fractions confirmed the biochemical studies that these pellets represented the basal and apical enriched membrane fractions respectively.
Chapter 4 Results

Plates 4.1A and B

These micrographs show a section through pellet 2 which was the mitochondria (M), enriched-membrane fraction (P₂).

Scales:
A = 0.5μm.
B = 1.5μm.

Plates 4.2C and D

These plates showing, a section through pellet 3 (P₃) which from biochemical studies is believed to represent a mixture of both basolateral and apical cell membranes.

V: Membrane bound vesicles.

Scales = 0.5μm.
Chapter 4 Results

**Plates 4.3E and F**

Electron micrograph showing a section through pellet 4 (P4) which from biochemical studies is believed to represent the enriched-basolateral membrane fraction.

M: Mitochondria.
R: Electron dense ribosome particles.

*Scales* = 0.5μm.

**Plates 4.4G and H**

Electron micrograph show a section through pellet 5 (P5) which from biochemical studies is believed to represent the enriched-apical membrane fraction.

V: Numerous membrane bound vesicles.

*Scales* = 0.5μm.
Chapter 4

DISCUSSION

The localization of enzyme activity is usually done using the assay of marker enzymes in conjunction with inhibitor assays and sometimes electron microscopy. A modified separation method was used to produce membrane fractions in this study which resulted in the production of plasma membrane fractions of high purity as judged from marked enzyme assays.

Marker enzyme assays were carried out on the membrane fractions obtained by differential centrifugation of a crude homogenate of Malpighian tubules from Locusta migratoria. These enabled the location of the main membrane fractions to be identified and the degree of cross contamination by other cellular fractions to be assessed.

The results presented here confirm earlier reports of the presence of Mg\textsuperscript{2+}-ATPase and Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase in Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria (Anstee and Bell, 1975; 1978; Donkin and Anstee, 1980; Anstee et al., 1986; Fogg, 1990; Fogg et al., 1991; Marshall, 1995; and present study). Electron microscopy and/or assays for alkaline phosphatase and SDH activities were used to confirm the presence of apical cell membranes and mitochondrial membranes in various cell fractions. After the 100,000xg spin differential separation of the apical cell membrane marker enzyme, alkaline phosphatase, and basolateral membrane marker, Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase, were observed. The pellet, P\textsubscript{4}, contained relatively high specific Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase activity, indicating that this pellet represents the basolateral membranes, with little apical membrane contamination, reflected by the relatively low alkaline phosphatase activity. Assays on pellet 5 demonstrated the largest alkaline phosphatase activity and negligible succinate dehydrogenase and Na\textsuperscript{+}/K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase activities, indicating that this represents
the apical membrane-enriched pellet. The results presented in this study agree well with the previous membrane separation works of Fogg et al., (1991) and Marshall (1995) on the same tissue; Rodriguez and Edelman (1979) on toad bladder epithelium, and with reports that the ouabain-sensitive Na⁺ pump is restricted to this cell surface in a variety of different tissues from various animal species (Ernst et al., 1980; Anstee and Bowler, 1984). Lechleitner and Phillips (1988) also provided biochemical and electron microscopic evidence for the concentration of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase in the basolateral membranes of locust rectal pad epithelium.

Anstee and Bowler (1984) demonstrated that deoxycholate/NaI-extracted preparations produce microsomes with high Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity and low Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity (usually less than 20% of the total ATPase activity). However, the method used in the present study produced a basolateral membrane pellet (P₄) with a Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity (42.5% of total ATPase activity) lower than the Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity (58.4% of total ATPase activity). The Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase : Mg²⁺-ATPase ratio value was 1:1.4. However, the specific activity of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase in P₄ was 331 nmoles Pi liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹ which was higher than that obtained by the deoxycholate/NaI technique, which was 98 nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Mitochondrial contamination has often been a problem when trying to localize the apical membrane fraction. Table 4.1 shows a comparison of the marker enzymes activity in different pellets obtained by the original separation method (Fogg et al., 1991) and the modified method used by this study. The indication from the present study, using marker enzyme assays showed greatest succinate dehydrogenase activity in pellet 2, which corresponds to the mitochondrial pellet in electron microscopic
Chapter 4 Discussion

Studies (Plate 4.1). The SDH \( P_2:P_4:P_5 \) ratio value is 1:0.46:0.02, whilst, it was 1:0.6:0.16 as reported by Fogg et al., (1991), indicating that the modified separation method used in the present study produced insignificant succinate dehydrogenase activity in pellet 5 coupled with the apparent absence of mitochondria from pellet 5 as shown by electron microscopy (Plate 4.4). This suggests that the apical-enriched membrane fraction is relatively free of mitochondrial contamination.

Table 4.1 Marker enzymes activities in different pellets:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Marker enzyme</th>
<th>Enzyme activity</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>( P_2 )</td>
<td>( P_4 )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SDH</td>
<td>289.2±29.6</td>
<td>133.1±11.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>116.0±6.1</td>
<td>71.3±5.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na(^+)/K(^-)-ATPase</td>
<td>71.4±6.9</td>
<td>331.9±21.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>14.3±5.3</td>
<td>187.4±9.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkaline phosphatase</td>
<td>466.3±19.4</td>
<td>530.1±45.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>38.8±7.8</td>
<td>359.7±34.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SDH activity expressed in nmoles succinate oxidized mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pi liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Alkaline phosphatase activity expressed in nmoles p-nitrophenol liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).

The greatest alkaline phosphatase activity was observed in \( P_5 \) indicating that this pellet represents the apical enriched-membrane fraction. The minimal succinate dehydrogenase activity in pellet 5 indicated that there was negligible mitochondrial contamination in the apical-enriched membrane fraction. This is similar to findings by

Marker enzyme studies also point to a plasma membrane location for Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase in the rectum of dragonfly larvae (Komnick et al., 1980) and in rumen epithelium (Hegner and Anika, 1975). The localization of enzyme activity is usually done by marker assay enzymes in conjunction with inhibitor assays and sometimes electron microscopy. For example, Wheeler and Harrison (1982) found that not all the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase activity recorded from the mantle of the clam, *Anodonta cataracta*, could be attributed to mitochondrial contamination as some of the activity was completely distinct from cytochrome oxidase activity (a mitochondrial marker). On the other hand Van Amelsvoort et al., (1977) believed that all of the anion-sensitive activity was of mitochondrial origin and this view was also supported by Izutsu and Siegel (1975). However, Deaton (1984) who demonstrated Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase activity in microsomal fractions of insect midgut, found the activity of succinate dehydrogenase in the microsomal fraction was only 12% of that in mitochondrial fractions. Similarly, Anstee and Fathpour (1981) studying the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* found microsomal fractions were relatively free of mitochondrial contamination, the succinate dehydrogenase activity being only 16% of the activity recorded from the mitochondrial fraction. A study by Kinne-Saffran and Kinne (1979) isolated an activity from the brush border of rat kidney cortex which was stimulated by Cl$^-$, HCO$_3^-$ and sulphite, they also isolated a mitochondrial anion-stimulated ATPase. However, these two enzyme activities exhibited different characteristics. Only the Mg$^{2+}$-ATPase activity of the mitochondrial fraction was inhibited by atractyloside, a chemical which affects the inner mitochondrial
membrane, whereas filipin, a chemical which affects cholesterol, only inhibited the Mg\(^{2+}\)-ATPase activity of the plasma membrane fraction, as this membrane is cholesterol-rich. Lechleitner and Phillips (1988) produced evidence for a differential distribution of mitochondrial markers in the different cell membrane fractions produced from Locust rectum. Fogg et al., (1991) proposed that since the succinate dehydrogenase and Mg\(^{2+}\)-dependent ATPase showed a different distribution in the different membrane fractions of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, then this ATPase activity could not be exclusively mitochondrial in origin.
CHAPTER 5

Biochemical studies on the subcellular distribution of the enzyme activities from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

INTRODUCTION

The mechanism of fluid transport by Malpighian tubule cells has been reviewed recently (Maddrell and O'Donnell, 1992; Nicolson, 1993; van Kerkhove, 1994; Dow, 1994; Beyenbach, 1995; Pannabecker, 1995). There is agreement that, in all the species studied to date, the primary active ion pump at the apical surface is V-type $H^+$-ATPase. This maintains a proton gradient across the apical membrane that drives movement of alkali cations from cell to lumen through apical $Na^+/H^+$ and $K^+/H^+$ exchangers (antiporters). The pump also establishes a favourable electrical gradient for movement of $Cl^-$ from cell to lumen, and water movement that is a secondary consequence of active ion transport, the two processes probably being coupled simple osmosis (O'Donnell *et al.*, 1982; McElwain, 1984), with water movement perhaps facilitated by water channels (Dow *et al.*, 1995). Ultimately, then, transport of both cations and anions into the lumen, and the resultant production of fluid, depends on the activity of the luminal V-type ATPase, and this appears to be generally true for most insect epithelia studied to date (Wieczorek, 1992; Klein, 1992; Dow, 1994). Investigations into the nature of the apical $K^+$ pump in various insect tissues found ouabain had no effect on $K^+$ transport (Berridge *et al.*, 1976; Maddrell, 1977; Harvey, 1980), therefore, apical $K^+$ transport was not believed to occur via $Na^+/K^+$-ATPase. Wolfersberger (1979) and Wolfersberger *et al.*, (1982) used biochemical assays to demonstrate a $K^+$-modulated ATPase activity in the midgut of *Manduca sexta*. Similarly, Cioffi and Harvey (1981), were able to detect a $K^+$ modulated activity in an
enriched apical membrane fraction, which contained portasomes. Portasomes being the name given to the studded particles which had previously been detected on the apical membranes of insect secretory cells (Anderson and Harvey, 1966; Cioffi, 1979; Harvey, 1980). Cioffi and Harvey (1981) suggested that as these particles resembled the proton-translocating F1F0 complex of mitochondria/bacteria that they may be involved in ion transport. The specific activity of this K+-ATPase in the enriched apical fraction was 6-7 fold greater than in the crude homogenate (Cioffi and Harvey, 1981).

Wieczorek (1982) carried out biochemical assays on the proboscis of a fly and discovered a K+-sensitive ATPase, this enzyme activity was further characterized by Wieczorek and Gnatzy (1985). Deaton (1984) identified a K+-stimulated activity in the microsomes of the midgut of Manduca sexta and Wieczorek et al., (1986) also located a K+-stimulated ATPase activity in midgut goblet cell apical membranes. The characteristics of this enzyme differed from those of an H+/K+-ATPase (Wieczorek et al., 1986) which had been suggested as a potential candidate for the common cation pump by some authors (Wallmark et al., 1980; Deaton, 1984). The enzyme was inhibited by nitrate.

Nitrate is an inhibitor of V-type ATPases (O'Neill et al., 1983; Lichko and Okorokov, 1984) but has no effect on the gastric microsomal vesicles H+/K+-ATPase (Lee et al., 1980). Nitrate is also an inhibitor of anion-stimulated ATPases (Van Amelsvoort et al., 1977; Anstee and Fathpour, 1981); an ATPase activity that has been reported at the apical surface of Malpighian tubules of Locusta (Fogg et al., 1991). Wieczorek et al., (1986) also discovered that the apical K+-ATPase activity was not inhibited by ouabain, orthovanadate, azide or oligomycin but 150µM DCCD caused complete inhibition. These inhibitor studies pointed to an ATPase which was more
closely related to the ATPases found in the membrane organelles of the exo- and endocytic pathways than the phosphorylated (P-type) or the mitochondrial/bacterial (F-type or F\textsubscript{0}F\textsubscript{1}-) ATPases. Therefore, at that time, evidence was accumulating for the apical cation pump being a K\textsuperscript{+}-ATPase, unique to insect transporting epithelia (Harvey \textit{et al.}, 1983b) thought to reside in portasomes on the apical membrane (Harvey \textit{et al.}, 1983a). Fogg \textit{et al.}, (1991), working on the Malpighian tubules of \textit{Locusta migratoria}, were able to detect some K\textsuperscript{+}-stimulated, ouabain insensitive ATPase activity in microsomal fractions. However, this activity was associated with the basal rather than apical membranes. Furthermore, despite what other workers (Harvey \textit{et al.}, 1981; Harvey \textit{et al.}, 1983b) have stated, Anstee and Bell (1975) did not demonstrate, nor claim to have demonstrated, an ATPase activity from microsomal preparations of Malpighian tubules which was stimulated by more than 2.5 fold by K\textsuperscript{+} alone.

Later, Wieczorek \textit{et al.}, (1989; 1991) presented evidence that the so-called 'common cation pump' or the molecular mechanism of the K\textsuperscript{+} pump in the apical membrane is actually a proton (H\textsuperscript{+}) pump, showing the characteristics of the classical V-type ATPases. This H\textsuperscript{+} pump can function as the driving force for K\textsuperscript{+} extrusion since it maintains a proton gradient, favourable for proton influx via a K\textsuperscript{+}/H\textsuperscript{+} exchanger (Schweikl \textit{et al.}, 1989; Wieczorek \textit{et al.}, 1989; 1991; Wieczorek, 1992; Dow, 1992; Zhang \textit{et al.}, 1992).

As described previously (Maddrell, 1978) active cation transport is believed to be sited at the apical microvilli of the plasma membrane. It has now been shown that antibodies to V-type ATPase selectively bind to the apical plasma membrane of
Malpighian tubules of *Manduca sexta* (Russell et al., 1992) and *Locusta migratoria* (Marshall, 1995).

Schweikl et al., (1989), using membrane bound ATPase prepared from the midgut of *Manduca sexta*, demonstrated an ATPase which was insensitive to azide and vanadate but sensitive to N-ethylmaleimide (NEM) and stimulated by K⁺. This activity corresponded to the ATPase activity of the highly purified goblet cell apical membranes of midgut of *Manduca sexta* studied by Wieczorek et al., (1986). NEM, when used at appropriate concentrations is a specific inhibitor of Vacuolar or V-type ATPases. V-type ATPases are sensitive to much lower concentrations of NEM (1-2μM) than the phosphorylated or P-type ATPases (100μM-1mM) and the F-type ATPases characteristic of mitochondria, chloroplasts and bacteria are virtually resistant (Forgac, 1989). In the study by Schweikl et al., (1989) 1μM NEM caused approximately 50% inhibition of enzyme activity and so provided significant evidence that a V-type ATPase may play a part in ion and fluid secretion. Fogg et al., (1991) suggested that the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase activity from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* could represent, in part, an anion-sensitive V-type ATPase.

All characterized energized H⁺-pumps fall into three major categories: F, P, and V-type, based on subunit organization, mechanism and inhibitor sensitivity (Forgac, 1989; Nelson, 1992). They are subject to inhibition by azide, orthovanadate and bafilomycin A₁, respectively and the enzymes within each category show functionally significant sequence identities, indicating a common ancestry (Nelson and Taiz, 1989; Pederson and Carafoli, 1987a,b). By contrast, the vacuolar H⁺-PPase is not inhibited by any of these type-specific inhibitors (see review Rea et al., 1992).
As explained above, V-type ATPases are a class of proton pumps. The question then arises as to how can they be linked to $K^+$ transport in insect ion and fluid transporting epithelia. Wieczorek et al., (1989) demonstrated the ATP-dependent development of a pH gradient across vesicular membranes of apical membrane preparations produced from the midgut of *Manduca sexta*. Although this proton transport exhibited the same inhibitor profiles and substrate specificities as ATPase activity recorded from the same tissue, proton transport was not stimulated by $K^+$, in fact in the presence of $K^+$ a proton gradient could not be developed or was dissipated. One conclusion reached from these results was that a proton/potassium antiporter existed, therefore the active transport of $H^+$ would energize the antiporter and hence extrusion of $K^+$ out of the cell.

Wieczorek et al., (1989) proposed a model for the extrusion of $K^+$ at the goblet cell apical membrane of the midgut of *Manduca sexta*. Further experiments were carried out on vesicles of purified goblet cell apical membrane using acridine orange as a pH indicator and oxonol V as a membrane potential indicator (Wieczorek et al., 1991). This study revealed that a positive interior vesicle potential was recorded when vesicles preloaded with $K^+$ were added to a $K^+$-free solution suggesting that $H^+/K^+$ exchange was not 1:1 during an exchange cycle of the antiporter. This interpretation was confirmed by studies using harmaline which is an inhibitor of the antiporter. Inclusion of harmaline in the extracellular medium prevented the development of a vesicle positive interior voltage. The new model which possessed an electrogenic antiporter on its apical membrane agreed with previous results obtained by Moffett and Koch (1988a,b) and Chao et al., (1991) working on the same material. Moffett and Koch conducted experiments using $K^+$-specific microelectrodes and had been unable to
demonstrate a $K^+$ chemical activity gradient across the goblet cell apical membrane. Chao et al., (1991) discovered that the pH gradient across the apical membrane was in the wrong direction to drive $K^+$ from the cell to the goblet cavity. These findings were confirmed by Moffett and Koch (1992) who stated that no difference in the $H^+$ or $K^+$ concentration across the apical membrane meant that neither ion could drive the movement of the other in electroneutral antiport. The driving force for the antiporter had to be the voltage component of the proton motive force created by the V-type ATPase. Therefore the conclusion of these and other papers was that the antiporter had to be electrogenic (see Wieczorek, 1992; Grinstein and Wieczorek, 1994). Recent work by Azuma et al., (1995) concluded that the stoichiometry of the antiporter is $K^+$/2$H^+$. Work by Lepier et al., (1994) using cholate as a solubilizer of the antiporter has been able to show that the V-type ATPase and the antiporter are separate proteins. Therefore there is strong evidence for the electrogenic nature of the antiporter in the midgut of Manduca sexta.

H$^+$.ATPases as mentioned previously are found in a variety of endomembrane organelles of plants, animals and fungi. In general, their function is to generate a transmembrane $H^+$ electrochemical potential difference which, in turn, provides the energy for solute transport or ATP synthesis (see reviews Forgac, 1989; Nelson, 1992). However, plant biochemical studies have revealed that the vacuolar membrane (tonoplast) of plant cells contains an inorganic pyrophosphate (diphosphate, $PP_i$)-energized $H^+$-pump ($H^+$-PPase; EC 3.6.1.1) as well as a more conventional $H^+$-ATPase (Rea and Sanders, 1987; Nelson and Taiz, 1989). This enzyme which appears to serve the purpose of electrogenic $H^+$-translocation from the cytosol to vacuole.
lumen, has the unusual characteristic of exclusively using PP\textsubscript{i} as an energy source (Rea and Poole, 1986; Rea and Sanders, 1987; Hedrich \textit{et al.}, 1989; Rea \textit{et al.}, 1992).

The H\textsuperscript{+} -PPase has been demonstrated in vacuolar membrane fractions from all of the major vascular plant types (Rea and Sanders, 1987; Hedrich \textit{et al.}, 1989; Davies \textit{et al.}, 1991; Richter and Schafer, 1992; Sarafian \textit{et al.}, 1992; Oberbeck \textit{et al.}, 1994; Sosa and Celis, 1995). However, the situation in non-plant cells is not so clear. Although Lichko and Okorokov (1991) have reported PP\textsubscript{i} -driven H\textsuperscript{+} -translocation in vacuolar membrane-enriched fractions from \textit{Saccharomyces carlsbergensis}. However, attempts to identify an H\textsuperscript{+} -PPase homologous either by immunological cross-reactivity to the plant H\textsuperscript{+} -PPase or by genomic analyses have yielded negative results.

HCO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{−}-stimulated ATPase activity has been demonstrated in microsomal fractions of various tissues from different species (Blum \textit{et al.}, 1971; Kinne-Saffaren and Kinne, 1974; De Renzis and Bornancin, 1977; and see reviews Schuurmans Stekhoven and Bonting, 1981; Gerencser and Lee, 1983). Indeed, such activity has been reported in the Malpighian tubules of \textit{Locusta migratoria} and was inhibited by SCN\textsuperscript{−}, sodium acetazolamide and oligomycin (Anstee and Fathpour, 1979; 1981; Fathpour and Anstee, 1981; Fogg \textit{et al.}, 1991) and in other insect tissues, e.g. midgut of \textit{Hyalophora cecropia} (Turbeck \textit{et al.}, 1968), midgut and integument of \textit{Manduca sexta} (Deaton, 1984), rectum of dragonfly (Komnick, 1978), \textit{Schistocerca gregaria} (Herrera \textit{et al.}, 1978; Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988) and \textit{Periplaneta americana} (Tolman and Steele, 1976). Since this enzyme is also present on the inner mitochondrial membrane, some early studies which located this enzyme activity to the plasma membrane, can now be attributed to mitochondrial contamination (see review

Lechleitner and Phillips (1988) provided evidence for an apical plasma membrane HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase, which may be responsible for the active transport of Cl$^-$ in locust rectum. An active Cl$^-$ extension process in the basolateral membrane of _Aplysia_ intestinal epithelium has also been reported by Gerencser (1983), and this electrogenic, Na$^+$-independent mechanism may be a (Cl$^-$/HCO$_3^-$)-stimulated ATPase (Gerencser and Lee, 1985). Whilst anion-sensitive ATPase has been implicated in Cl$^-$/HCO$_3^-$ exchange in the rectum of _Schistocerca gregaria_ (Herrera _et al._, 1978), H$^+$/HCO$_3^-$ transport in rat submandibular gland (Simon _et al._, 1972a) and HCO$_3^-$ transport and Na$^+$/H$^+$ exchange in the brush border membrane of the renal proximal tubule (Liang and Sacktor, 1976).

Several theories have been proposed to explain the transport of ions and water through various epithelia. These theories have suggested that the anion-stimulated ATPase takes part in the active transport of anions (Komnick, 1978, Gerencser and Lee, 1985; Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988; Fogg, 1990; Fogg _et al._, 1991). This enzyme has mainly been linked to ion/water transport because thiocyanate, an inhibitor of the anion-stimulated ATPase, also inhibits secretion by some epithelia (Simon and Thomas, 1972; Blum _et al._, 1971).

Previously, Fogg _et al._, (1991) had tentatively suggested that an anion-stimulated activity located on the apical membrane of _Locusta_ may represent an anion-
sensitive V-type ATPase. In many tissues the common cation pump has been replaced by a parallel arrangement of a V-type ATPase and a K⁺ (or Na⁺)/H⁺ antiport (Wessing and Zierold, 1996). However, the involvement of a V-type ATPase and antiporter in fluid secretion by the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* has been established (Marshall, 1995). Therefore, one of the aims of this project was to confirm and demonstrate the properties of V-type ATPase activity isolated from apical membrane-rich fractions of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. 
Chapter 5

MATERIALS AND METHODS

Determination of V-type ATPase:

Unless otherwise indicated, V-type ATPase activity was assayed as described by (Schweikl et al., 1989) in a reaction mixture that contained 0.125ml membrane fraction, 0.125ml of 12 mM ATP (Tris salt) and 0.25ml (final concentrations) of one of the following:

Medium 1): 1mM MgCl₂, 20mM KCl, 50 mM Tris-MOPS, 0.1mM EGTA, 1mM 2-mercaptoethanol, 0.5mM sodium azide, 0.1mM sodium orthovanadate, 0.3mg of BSA/ml, and 0.05% Triton X-100, except in the pH optimum experiments, the pH was adjusted to 7.5 with tris-base.

Medium 2): Medium 1 plus 1mM NEM.

The mixture was preincubated in the absence of the substrate for 30 min at 35±0.1°C, and the reaction was started by the addition of 0.125ml of ATP (Tris salt) for 30min. V-type ATPase activity was measured as the difference in Pi liberated in reaction medium 1, and that released in medium 2, in the presence of NEM. Activity was expressed in nmoles Pi liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Controls were run where ATP was not added until the reaction had been stopped by the addition of 1 ml of a 1:1 mixture of 1% Lubrol and 1% ammonium molybdate in 0.9M sulphuric acid (Atkinson et al., 1973) to determine the extent of non-enzymatic hydrolysis.
Determination of Mg\(^{2+}\)-dependent and Mg\(^{2+}\)-dependent HCO\(_3^-\)-stimulated ATPase:

Incubations were carried out at 35 ± 0.1°C for a fixed time. Appropriate incubation media were thermoequilibrated for 15 min in Eppendorf tubes. These consisted of 0.25ml ionic and medium 0.125ml membrane fraction. Three basic ionic media having the following final concentration of ions were used, unless otherwise stated:

- **Medium i)**: 4mM MgCl\(_2\) in 20mM imidazole buffer, pH 7.5,

- **Medium ii)**: (medium i) plus 20mM NaCl,

- **Medium iii)**: (medium i) plus 20mM NaHCO\(_3\).

The reaction was started by the addition of 0.125ml of ATP (Tris salt) for 15min. Liberation of P\(_i\) was measured as described previously. HCO\(_3^-\)-stimulation of ATPase activity was calculated as the difference in P\(_i\) liberated in reaction medium (iii), containing MgCl\(_2\) and NaHCO\(_3\), and that released in medium (ii), containing MgCl\(_2\) and NaCl. Controls were run where ATP was not added until the reaction had been stopped by the addition of 1 ml of a 1:1 mixture of 1% Lubrol and 1% ammonium molybdate in 0.9 M sulphuric acid to determine the extent of non-enzymatic hydrolysis.

Reaction media had to be modified when NEM was included in the assay as it reacts with imidazole. Therefore, in experiments involving NEM the buffer used was HEPES. Activity was expressed in nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Chapter 5

RESULTS

Section I

Biochemical and inhibitor studies on the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^{-}$-stimulated ATPase activities prepared from basal and apical membrane-enriched fraction of Malpighian tubules.

Presence of the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^{-}$-stimulated ATPase in the basal and apical membrane-rich fractions:

The basal-enriched membrane fraction (P4), and apical-enriched membrane fraction (P5) were prepared as described previously in Chapter 4.

The results obtained from five independent preparations are shown in Figure 5.1 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.1) as mean ± SEM. It can be seen that the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^{-}$-stimulated ATPase activity is present in both pellets P4 and P5. The data were normalized with respect to the activity observed in the presence of 20mM NaCl. Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase activity of P4 and P5 in the presence of 20mM NaCl was 435.8 ± 11.6 and 650.3 ± 33.6 nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min.$^{-1}$, respectively. However, inclusion of 20mM NaHCO$_3$ in place of 20mM NaCl in the reaction medium, resulted in increased enzyme activity, the activity of P4 rose to 645.0 ± 29.3 nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min.$^{-1}$ and that of P5 to 979.6 ± 43.7 nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min.$^{-1}$, representing a significant increase in the normalized activity of 178.3 ± 25.5 and 282.8 ± 29.7 nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min.$^{-1}$ respectively compared to that recorded in the presence of 20mM NaCl.
Chapter 5 Results

Figure 5.1

The Mg\textsuperscript{2+} dependent ATPase and Mg\textsuperscript{2+} -dependent HCO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{-} -stimulated ATPase activities associated with the basal (P\textsubscript{4}) and apical (P\textsubscript{5}) membrane-enriched fractions of Malpighian tubules from Locusta migratoria were measured in the presence of 4mM MgCl\textsubscript{2} and 20mM NaCl or 20mM NaHCO\textsubscript{3}. Reactions were started by adding ATP Tris-salt (final concentration 3mM) and incubations were carried out at 35 °C for 30 min as described in Methods.

HCO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{-} -stimulated ATPase activity was measured as the difference in inorganic phosphate measured in the reaction medium containing 4mM MgCl\textsubscript{2}, 20mM NaHCO\textsubscript{3} and that released in a reaction medium containing 4mM MgCl\textsubscript{2}, 20mM NaCl.

**Ordinate:** ATPases activity expressed in nmoles P\textsubscript{i} liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}.

**Abscissa:** Membrane fractions:

- P\textsubscript{4} Basal membrane fraction
- P\textsubscript{5} Apical membrane fraction

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M. (n=5)
Mg\(^{2+}\)-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20mM NaCl.

Mg\(^{2+}\)-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20mM NaHCO\(_3\)

Stimulation due to the presence of NaHCO\(_3\) instead of NaCl.
Influence of various inhibitors on Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activities:

The basal- and apical membrane-enriched fractions (P4 and P5) were prepared as described previously and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activities assayed in presence and absence of various inhibitors.

Effect of NaSCN on ATPases activity:

Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase (in the presence and absence of 20mM NaCl) and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity were determined in the presence and absence of 10mM NaSCN in the reaction media. Figures 5.2a and 5.2b (see also Appendix 4, Tables 4.2 and 4.3) show results obtained from three independent experiments. It can be seen that inclusion of 10mM NaSCN in the reaction medium caused a substantial inhibition of both Mg$^{2+}$-dependent and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activities of P4 and P5.

Effect of NEM and bafilomycin A$_1$ on ATPases activity:

1mM NEM and 1µM bafilomycin A$_1$ had similar effects on the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase and Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity of pellet 4 and 5. Figures 5.2a and 5.2b show results obtained from three independent experiments. It can be seen that NEM and bafilomycin A$_1$ had no significant effect on either Mg$^{2+}$-dependent ATPase or Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activities of pellet 4. In contrast, the Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity of pellet 5 was inhibited by approximately 55% and 60% in the presence of 1mM NEM and 1µM
bafilomycin A₁, respectively. However, neither NEM nor bafilomycin A₁ significantly affected the Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity of P₅.

**Effect of sodium azide (NaN₃) on ATPases activity:**

Inclusion of 1mM NaN₃ in the assay medium caused significant inhibition (p<0.05) of both Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase (~65%) and Mg²⁺-dependent HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase activity (~50%) of P₄ Figures 5.2a, b; (see also Appendix 4, Tables 4.2 and 4.3). Lower inhibition (~25%) was observed in the activity of Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase and Mg²⁺-dependent HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase of P₅ in the presence of 1mM NaN₃. NaN₃ did not effect on the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase activity of P₄ and P₅.
Figures 5.2a and 5.2b

Effect of various inhibitors on Mg^{2+}-dependent ATPase and Mg^{2+}-dependent HCO_3^- -stimulated ATPase activity associated with the basal (P4) and apical (P5) membrane-enriched fractions of Malpighian tubules from *Locusta migratoria* were investigated. Reactions were started by adding ATP Tris-salt (final concentration 3mM) and incubations were carried out at 35 °C for 30 min as described in Methods.

HCO_3^- -stimulated ATPase activity was measured as the difference in inorganic phosphate measured in the reaction medium containing 4mM MgCl_2, 20mM NaHCO_3 and that released in a reaction medium containing 4mM MgCl_2, 20mM NaCl.

**Ordinate:** ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pi liberated mg Protein^{-1} min^{-1}.

**Abscissa:** Inhibitors:
- SCN= 10 mM NaSCN
- NEM= 1mM NEM
- Baf= 1μM Bafilomycin A1
- NaN_3= 1mM Sodium azide

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M. (n=3).
**Figure 5.2a**

**Apical membrane fraction (P₅)**

![Bar graph showing Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20mM NaCl and Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20 mM NaHCO₃.](image)

Inhibitors:
- Control
- SCN
- NEM
- Baf
- NaN3

**Figure 5.2b**

**Basal membrane fraction (P₄)**

![Bar graph showing Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20mM NaCl and Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20 mM NaHCO₃.](image)

Inhibitors:
- Control
- SCN
- NEM
- Baf
- NaN3

- Black bars: Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20mM NaCl
- Light gray bars: Mg²⁺-dependent ATPase activity in the presence of 20 mM NaHCO₃
- Dark gray bars: HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase activity
Section II

Characterization study of V-type ATPase of the apical membrane-enriched fraction of Malpighian tubules.

Effect of pH on V-type ATPase activity:

V-type ATPase was assayed in the reaction medium (50mM Tris- Mops, 20mM KCl, 1mM EGTA, 0.5mM NaN₃, 0.1mM Na₃VO₄, 0.05% Triton X-100 and 0.3 mg/ml BSA, pH 7.5). A 30mM bis-tris propane buffer system, was used to produce a stable pH range from pH 6.0 to 10.0. Reaction media were adjusted to the required pH with HCl. Figure 5.3 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.4) shows the change observed in V-type ATPase activity in relation to pH. Results obtained from five independent preparations gave maximum activity (2153.4 ± 100.4 nmoles P₃ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹) at pH 7.5. The activity fell sharply when pH was increased or decreased about this value.

Effect of ATP concentration on V-type ATPase activity:

Enzyme assays were carried out in reaction media in which ATP (Tris-salt) concentration varied between 0.0 and 6.0mM. The relationship between ATPase activity and ATP concentration is shown in Figure 5.4 and Appendix 4, Table 4.5. It can be seen that the relationship between V-type ATPase activity and increasing ATP concentration is hyperbolic. As expected, in the absence of ATP there was no activity.

Effect of Mg²⁺ concentration on V-type ATPase activity:

V-type ATPase was assayed in reaction medium containing concentrations of MgCl₂ ranging from 0 to 7mM. Figure 5.5 shows the relationship between ATPase activity and MgCl₂ concentration.
Figures 5.3, 5.4 and 5.5

The effect of pH, MgCl₂ and ATP on V-type ATPase activity was investigated. The reaction medium consisted of: 1mM MgCl₂, 20mM KCl, 50mM Tris-MOPS, 0.1mM EGTA, 0.5mM NaN₃, 0.1mM Na₃VO₄ and 0.3mg/ml BSA, pH 7.5. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 3mM), except when investigating the effect of ATP; incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.

Figure 5.3

Effect of pH on V-type ATPase activity.

Ordinate: V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Abscissa: pH. (n=5).

Figure 5.4

Effect of different concentrations of ATP (Tris salt) on V-type ATPase activity.

Ordinate: V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Abscissa: [ATP] mM. (n=5)

Figure 5.5

Effect of different concentrations MgCl₂ on V-type ATPase activity.

Ordinate: V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Abscissa: [MgCl₂] mM. (n=5)
Fig. 5.3
Effect of pH on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.4
Effect of ATP on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.5
Effect of MgCl$_2$ on V-type ATPase activity
It can be seen that in the absence of MgCl₂ there was no activity. A marked increase in activity was observed with increasing MgCl₂ concentration up to 5mM for the V-type ATPase. Maximum specific activity was obtained at 5mM (2366.5 ± 72.0 nmoles Pₐ lib. mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹) (see Appendix 4, Table 4.6)

**Effect of NEM on V-type ATPase activity:**

Figure 5.6a shows the effect different concentrations of NEM (0 - 1000μM) on V-type ATPase. It can be seen that V-type ATPase activity was highly sensitive to NEM. At 5μM NEM activity was reduced significantly (p<0.001) to approximately 30% of the control value (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.7). 100μM NEM effected almost total inhibition of V-type ATPase activity. The IC₅₀ of V-type ATPase activity (i.e. the NEM concentration that gives 50% inhibition) as shown in Figure 5.6b was 2.15μM.

**Effect of bafilomycin A₁ on V-type ATPase activity:**

Figure 5.7a (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.8) show the effect of different concentrations of bafilomycin A₁ (0 - 1000nM) on the V-type ATPase. It can be seen that the enzyme activity was extremely sensitive to bafilomycin A₁, at only 0.1nM activity was significantly (p<0.05) reduced by approximately 23% of that of the controls. 10nM bafilomycin A₁ effected almost total inhibition of V-type ATPase activity.

Figure 5.7b shows probit analysis of the IC₅₀ of V-type ATPase activity (i.e. the bafilomycin A₁ concentration that gives 50% inhibition) which was 0.44nM.
Chapter 5 Results

Figure 5.6a

Effect of different concentrations of NEM on V-type ATPase activity of *Locusta migratoria* Malpighian tubules microsomal preparations.

The V-type ATPase activity associated with the apical membrane-enriched fraction (P₅) of Malpighian tubules from *Locusta* was measured in the presence of different concentrations of NEM. The reaction medium consisted of: 1mM MgCl₂, 20mM KCl, 50mM Tris-MOPS, 0.1mM EGTA, 0.5mM NaN₃, 0.1mM Na₃VO₄ and 0.3mg/ml BSA, pH 7.5. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 3mM) and incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

**Ordinate:** Activity remaining expressed as a % of original activity in the absence of NEM.

**Abscissa:** [NEM] µM.

Mean value of 100% activity in nmoles P₇ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹ was 1945.5±75.5.

Figure 5.6b

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 4, Table 4.7 were converted into probits and lines of best fit were calculated according to the method shown in Appendix, 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M. (n=5)
Figure 5.6a  
Effect of [NEM] on V-type ATPase activity.

Figure 5.6b  Probit analysis.
Figure 5.7a

Effect of varying concentrations of Bafilomycin A\textsubscript{1} on V-type ATPase activity in *Locusta migratoria* Malpighian tubules microsomal preparations.

The V-type ATPase activity associated with the apical membrane-enriched fraction (P\textsubscript{5}) of Malpighian tubules from *Locusta* was measured in the presence of different concentrations of Bafilomycin A\textsubscript{1}. The reaction medium consisted of: 1mM MgCl\textsubscript{2}, 20mM KCl, 50mM Tris-MOPS, 0.1mM EGTA, 0.5mM NaN\textsubscript{3}, 0.1mM Na\textsubscript{3}VO\textsubscript{4} and 0.3mg/ml BSA, pH 7.5. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 3mM) and incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

**Ordinate:** Activity remaining expressed as a % of original activity in the absence of Bafilomycin A\textsubscript{1}.

**Abscissa:** [Bafilomycin A\textsubscript{1}] nM.

Mean value of 100% activity in nmoles P\textsubscript{i} liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}. was 1640.8±74.0.

Figure 5.7b

The percentage of inhibition data presented in Appendix 4, Table 4.8 were converted into probits and lines of best fit were calculated according to the method shown in Appendix, 1.1.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M. (n=5)
Effect of various salts on V-type ATPase of the apical membrane-enriched fraction.

**Effect of KCl on V-type ATPase activity:**

The effect of different concentrations of KCl (0 - 60mM) on V-type ATPase activity is shown in Figure 5.8. It can be seen that increasing KCl concentration resulted in a significant stimulation of enzyme activity. The results obtained from three preparations are shown in Appendix 4, Table 4.9, maximum activity was observed at a concentration of 30mM KCl. However, a marked reduction in the stimulation level was recorded when KCl concentration was increased above 30mM.

**Effect of NaCl on V-type ATPase activity:**

The effect of different concentrations of NaCl (0-60mM) on V-type ATPase activity is shown in Figure 5.9 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.10). NaCl stimulated activity of the enzyme, with maximum activity observed in the presence of 40mM NaCl.

The unstimulated activity of V-type ATPase was 777.8 ± 60.1nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$. However, inclusion of 40mM NaCl in the reaction medium caused the activity to rose to 1510.4 ± 87.5nmoles P$_i$ liberated mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$. A slight reduction in the percentage stimulation was observed when the concentration of NaCl increased above 40mM.

**Effect of LiCl on V-type ATPase activity:**

V-type ATPase was assayed in reaction media containing concentrations of LiCl ranging from 0 to 60mM. The results obtained from three independent
Figure 5.7a
Effect of bafilomycin A₁ on V-type ATPase activity.

Figure 5.7b Probit analysis.
preparations are shown in Figure 5.10 and Appendix 4, Table 4.11. It can be seen that LiCl stimulated V-type ATPase activity, maximum stimulation being observed in the presence of 40mM LiCl. ATPase activity in the absence of LiCl was 760.3 ± 35.6 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. In the presence of 40mM LiCl activity increased to 1165.2 ± 60.1 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}, representing a stimulation of ~150%.

**Effect of Choline Chloride on V-type ATPase activity:**

Effect of different concentrations of choline chloride (0-60mM) on ATPase activity is shown in Figure 5.11 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.12). It can be seen that inclusion of choline chloride in the assay medium caused an increase in the activity of V-type ATPase. There was a stimulation of ~30% when 10mM choline chloride was included in the assay medium and this increased gradually until it reached a maximum activity at 50mM, a stimulation of approximately 185%.

**Effect of Tris-HCl on V-type ATPase activity:**

Enzyme assays were carried out in reaction medium containing concentrations of Tris-HCl ranging from 5 to 80mM. Figure 5.12 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.13) show the relationship between ATPase activity and concentration of Tris. It can be seen that there was stimulation associated with increasing concentration of Tris-HCl in the reaction medium; maximum stimulation level being achieved at 50mM.

A concentration of 5mM Tris-HCl produced an activity of 791.6 ± 68.3 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. However, at 50mM it rose to 2008.1 ± 123.6 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Increasing concentration of Tris-HCl above 50mM in the reaction medium reduced the level of stimulation.


**Effect of RbCl on V-type ATPase activity:**

Enzyme assays were carried out in reaction media in which the RbCl concentration was varied between 0 and 60mM. Figure 5.13 shows the relationship between ATPase activity and RbCl concentration (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.14). In the absence of RbCl activity was 721.3 ± 42.0 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\). Inclusion of RbCl in the assay medium caused an increase in the V-type ATPase activity. Maximal activity (1020.9 ± 62.1 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\)) was observed in the presence of 40mM RbCl, representing approximately a 140% stimulation of activity. Higher concentrations of RbCl resulted in a small, but not significant, reduction in this level of activity.

**Effect of KHCO_3 on V-type ATPase activity:**

To investigate the effect of KHCO_3 on V-type ATPase activity, a reaction medium was used which contained a different concentrations of KHCO_3 (0-100mM), results are shown in Figure 5.14 and Appendix 4, Table 4.15. It can be seen that was significant stimulation was caused by increasing the concentration of KHCO_3, maximum stimulation was observed at a concentration of 70mM KHCO_3, whereas, the mean basic activity obtained in the presence of 1mM MgCl_2 alone was 601.9 ± 40.2 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\), however, a significant rise to 2388.9 ± 172.1 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\) was recorded in the presence of 70mM KHCO_3. Further, increases in KHCO_3 concentration above 70mM resulted a slight reduction in the level of stimulation.
Figures 5.8, 5.9, 5.10, 5.11, 5.12, and 5.13

Effect of varying concentrations of various salts on V-type ATPase activity of Locusta migratoria Malpighian tubules microsomal preparations.

The V-type ATPase activity recorded in assay medium: 1mM MgCl₂, 5mM Tris-HCl, 0.1mM EDTA, 0.5mM NaN₃ and 0.1mM Na₃VO₄, pH 7.5. Different concentrations of the salt were included in this medium and stimulation recorded. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 1mM) and incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

Ordinate: V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles P_i liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Abscissa: [Salt] mM.

Figure 5.8
Effect of KCl, (n=5).

Figure 5.9
Effect of NaCl, (n=3).

Figure 5.10
Effect of LiCl, (n=3).

Figure 5.11
Effect of choline chloride, (n=3).

Figure 5.12
Effect of Tris-HCl, (n=3).

Figure 5.13
Effect of RbCl, (n=3).

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.
Fig. 5.8 Effect of KCl on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.9 Effect of NaCl on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.10 Effect of LiCl on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.11 Effect of Choline Cl on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.12 Effect of Tris-HCl on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.13 Effect of RbCl on V-type ATPase activity
**Effect of NaHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity:**

V-type ATPase activity was determined over a range of concentrations of NaHCO₃ (0 - 100mM). Figure 5.15 shows the relationship between concentrations of NaHCO₃ and enzyme activity (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.16). Inclusion of NaHCO₃ in the assay medium caused a stimulation of the V-type ATPase activity; maximum stimulation was recorded with 70mM.

In the presence of 1mM Mg²⁺ alone the activity was 640.2 ± 41.2 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Inclusion of 70mM NaHCO₃ caused the activity to rise to 2210.3±131.6 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹ representing ~245% stimulation of activity.

**Effect of KSO₄ on V-type ATPase activity:**

ATPase assays were carried out in reaction media in which the concentration of KSO₄ varied between 0 to 60mM. The results obtained are shown in Figure 5.16 (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.17). A marked increase was observed in the V-type ATPase activity with increasing KSO₄ concentration. The maximal stimulation was recorded at a concentration of 30mM (1210.9 ± 80.5nmoles P_i liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹). However, this stimulatory effect was reduced when the concentration of KSO₄ rose above 30mM.

**Effect of Potassium Gluconate on V-type ATPase activity:**

V-type ATPase was assayed in reaction medium in which K gluconate was present over the concentration range 0 - 60mM. The results obtained are shown in Figure 5.17 and Appendix 4, Table 4.18. Potassium gluconate stimulated V-type
**Figures 5.14 and 5.15**

Effect of varying concentrations of bicarbonate on V-type ATPase activity in *Locusta migratoria* Malpighian tubules microsomal preparations.

The V-type ATPase activity recorded in assay medium: 1mM MgCl₂, 5mM Tris-HCl, 0.1mM EDTA, 0.5mM NaN₃ and 0.1mM Na₃VO₄, pH 7.5. Different concentrations of the salt were included in this medium and stimulation recorded. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 1mM) and incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.

**Figure 5.14**

Effect of KHCO₃, (n=3).

**Ordinate:** V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

**Abscissa:** [KHCO₃] mM.

**Figure 5.15**

Effect of NaHCO₃, (n=3).

**Ordinate:** V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

**Abscissa:** [NaHCO₃] mM.
Fig. 5.14 Effect of KHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity

![Graph showing the effect of KHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity.]

Fig. 5.15 Effect of NaHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity

![Graph showing the effect of NaHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity.]

ATPase activity. Maximum stimulation was observed in the presence of 40mM (942.3 ± 75.9 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}).

**Effect of Potassium Fluoride (KF) on V-type ATPase activity:**

Figure 5.18 shows the relationship between V-type ATPase activity and different concentrations of KF (0 - 30mM). Inclusion of KF in the assay medium caused an increase in the activity of the enzyme. Maximum activity was observed in the presence of 20mM 1006.3 ± 30.4 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1} (see also Appendix 4, Table 4.19).

**Effect of KBr on V-type ATPase activity:**

Figure 5.19 shows the effect of different concentrations of KBr (0-60mM) on the V-type ATPase activity. An increase in the enzyme activity was observed with increasing KBr concentration up to 30mM. Maximal stimulation was recorded in the presence of 30mM KBr, when the activity was 828.6 ± 41.7 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1} (~120%) compared to the activity in the absence of KBr 673.8 ± 32.6 nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. (for further see also Appendix 4, Table 4.20).

**Effect of KNO_3 on V-type ATPase activity:**

The effect of different concentrations of KNO_3 (0-30mM) on the V-type ATPase activity was investigated. The results obtained from three experiments (as mean ± SEM) are shown in Figure 5.20 and Appendix 4, Table 4.21. It can be seen that KNO_3 inhibited ATPase activity; thus a concentration of 1mM KNO_3 effected a 20% inhibition of activity, and in the presence of 30mM a significantly reduction 70% (p<0.005) was observed.
Figures 5.16, 5.17, 5.18, 5.19, and 5.20

Effect of varying concentrations of various salts on V-type ATPase activity in Locusta migratoria Malpighian tubules microsomal preparations.

The V-type ATPase activity recorded in assay medium: 1mM MgCl₂, 5mM Tris-HCl, 0.1mM EDTA, 0.5mM NaN₃ and 0.1mM Na₃VO₄, pH 7.5. Different concentrations of the salt were included in this medium and stimulation or inhibition recorded. Reactions were started by adding ATP (final concentration 1mM) and incubations were carried out at 35°C for 30 min as described in the Methods.

Each point represents the mean ± S.E.M.

Ordinate: V-type ATPase activity expressed in nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹.

Abscissa: [Salt] mM.

Figure 5.16
Effect of KSO₄, (n=3).

Figure 5.17
Effect of K Gluconate, (n=3).

Figure 5.18
Effect of KF, (n=3).

Figure 5.19
Effect of KBr, (n=3).

Figure 5.20
Effect of KNO₃, (n=3).
Fig. 5.16 Effect of KSO$_3$ on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.17 Effect of K Gluconate on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.18 Effect of KF on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.19 Effect of KBr on V-type ATPase activity

Fig. 5.20 Effect of KNO$_3$ on V-type ATPase activity
Hegner and Anika (1975) for rumen epithelium and Gerencser and Lee (1985) for intestine of *Aplysia*. Ivashchenko *et al.*, (1975) found that 15-77% stimulation of ATPase activity using a different tissues of rat was produced by a concentration of HCO$_3^-$ between 10 and 30mM. Ho and Chan (1981) obtained a slightly higher value of 30-40mM HCO$_3^-$ for the gill tissue of eel, and Turbeck *et al.*, (1968) discovered the concentration which produced the greatest stimulation of ATPase activity in midgut of *Hyalophora cecropia* was 50mM HCO$_3^-$.

The results presented in this study showed different values of stimulation of Mg$^{2+}$-ATPase activity by 20mM NaHCO$_3$ in basal membrane fraction (P$_4$) which was 645.0 nmoles P$_i$ lib. mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$ and 979.6 nmoles P$_i$ lib. mg protein$^{-1}$ min$^{-1}$ in apical membrane fraction (P$_5$). These results indicate that there are possibly two different Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPases activities located on the basal (mitochondrial ATPase) and apical (microsomal ATPase) membrane cell. A similar stimulation of the enzyme activity was obtained by Marshall (1995). However, in a previous study by Fathpour (1980) the stimulation was larger being approximately 50%. Different degrees of stimulation by HCO$_3^-$ have been recorded in different tissues; Suzuki (1978) discovered that mouse kidney microsomes were only stimulated by 10-15% when HCO$_3^-$ was included in the reaction medium but the mitochondrial preparation from the same tissue was stimulated by almost 50%. Van Amelsvoort *et al.*, (1978) working on red blood cells found a stimulation of 27% was caused by HCO$_3^-$ A larger HCO$_3^-$ stimulation was recorded from gastric mucosa (~54%) by Van Amelsvoort *et al.*, (1977) and Liang and Sacktor (1976) working on renal proximal tubule of rabbit recorded a 60% stimulation of activity by 50mM HCO$_3^-$.
In red blood cells, Duncan (1975) recorded a stimulation of 47% when 20mM NaHCO$_3$ was substituted for NaCl.

It would appear that considerable non-mitochondrial HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity is associated with the apical cell membrane-rich fraction of locust Malpighian tubules. Previous studies have also revealed anion-stimulated ATPase activity in membrane fractions from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* (Fogg, 1990; Fogg *et al*., 1991; Fathpour and Dahlman, 1994; Marshall, 1995), the recta of *Schistocerca gregaria* (Herrera *et al*., 1978), larval dragonfly (Komnick *et al*., 1980), the midgut and integument of *Manduca sexta* (Deaton, 1984), the midgut of *Hyalophora cecropia* (Turbeck *et al*., 1968), and in various other animal tissues (reviewed by Gerencser and Lee, 1983). Linkage of such activity to active anion transport has been proposed (Komnick *et al*., 1980; Bornancin *et al*., 1980; Gerencser and Lee, 1983; 1985). One problem encountered in determining the subcellular site of anion-stimulated ATPase is mitochondrial contamination of plasma membrane fractions. In the present study, the distribution of anion-stimulated ATPase activity was not equivalent to that of the mitochondrial marker enzyme, SDH. This may be taken as support for the suggestion that such activity is not exclusively mitochondrial in origin.

Mg$^{2+}$-dependent HCO$_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity, which could be inhibited by SCN$^-$ (Turbeck *et al*., 1968; Wiebelhaus *et al*., 1971; De Renzis and Bornancin, 1977; Van Amelsvoort, 1977), but not ouabain, was first discovered in microsomal preparations from frog gastric mucosa (Kasbekar *et al*., 1965), and since has been reported in a variety of different animal species (Blum *et al*., 1971; Wiebelhaus *et al*., 1971; De Pont *et al*., 1972; Sachs *et al*., 1972a; Izutsu and Siegel, 1975; Suzuki, 1978). The enzyme has been implicated in CI$^-$ (Hanrahan and Phillips, 1983;
Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988) and HCO₃⁻ transport (Simon et al., 1972a), Cl⁻/HCO₃⁻ exchange (Herrera et al., 1978), H⁺/HCO₃⁻ transport (Simon et al., 1972a) and Na⁺/H⁺ exchange (Kinne-Saffran and Kinne, 1974; Liang and Sacktor, 1976).

Hanrahan and Phillips (1983) have suggested that active Cl⁻ transport is a primary transport process in locust rectum, and possibly involves an apical anion-stimulated ATPase. Indeed working on locust rectum (Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988) provided some evidence for an apical plasma membrane anion-stimulated ATPase, which may be responsible for active Cl⁻ transport. These workers found such ATPase activity to be stimulated to the greatest extent by sulphite, followed by HCO₃⁻ and finally Cl⁻, and strongly inhibited by thiocyanate. Similarly, Anstee and Fathpour (1981) also found the enzyme in the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria to be stimulated to the greatest extent by sulphite, followed by HCO₃⁻ and bromide (see also, Blum et al., 1971; Sachs et al., 1972b; Simon et al., 1972a,b; Ebel and Lardy, 1975; Liang and Sacktor, 1976). However, these workers found Cl⁻ had no significant effect on enzyme activity, and nitrite inhibited ATP hydrolysis. The lack of specificity of ATPase for stimulation or inhibition by different anions led to the more appropriate description of anion-sensitive ATPase (Van Amelsvoort et al., 1977). Fogg et al., (1991) proposed that since the succinate dehydrogenase and HCO₃⁻-ATPase showed a different distribution in the different membrane fractions of the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria, then the HCO₃⁻-ATPase activity could not be exclusively mitochondrial in origin.

It would appear that the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria possess a HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase in both the basolateral and apical cell membrane-rich fractions, with a higher specific activity associated with the former. Cl⁻/HCO₃⁻
exchange at the basal surface may be responsible for Cl⁻ entry into the cell, with the Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase responsible for K⁺ entry. This would result in the transport of K⁺ and Cl⁻ into the cell and is potentially more adaptable than the K⁺-Cl⁻ cotransporter, with K⁺ and Cl⁻ being transported independently, aided by intracellular pH. Because thiocyanate also inhibits alkali/acid secretion by pancreas and gastric mucosa and fluid secretion by the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria, it has been suggested that the anion-sensitive ATPase may be involved in secretory processes (Blum et al., 1971; Simon and Thomas, 1972; Fathpour and Dahlman, 1994). Another possible role for the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase which has been suggested is in active Cl⁻ transport across the apical membrane of locust rectum (Lechleitner and Phillips, 1988). However, since in the Malpighian tubules of Locusta, Cl⁻ transport is most likely to be passive, moving down a favourable electrical gradient, (Baldrick et al., 1988) then an involvement in active Cl⁻ transport in this tissue seems unlikely.

Na⁺ transport across the apical membrane could be mediated by an anion-stimulated ATPase in the form of electrogenic Na⁺/H⁺ exchange. It may be possible that this exchange process preferentially accepts K⁺ rather than Na⁺, due to intracellular levels of K⁺ being relatively high compared to Na⁺. However, Fogg (1990) suggested that the effects of SCN⁻ on VA, would be most difficult to explain on the basis of anion-stimulated ATPase being the apical cation pump. It may be that these systems help regulate intracellular pH, whilst other transport processes, such as the electrogenic (Na⁺/K⁺)-ATPase and apical cation pump serve as the major ion transporters.
Studies of the biochemical properties of the apical membrane-rich V-type ATPase activity prepared from Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria:

The effect of treating the tubules with NEM, an inhibitor of V-type ATPases, was also studied. NEM is specific for sulphydryl groups and inhibits V-type ATPases between the concentration range of 1-2 mM, P-type ATPases between 0.1-1 mM and F-type ATPases are essentially unaffected (Forgac, 1989). In this study the concentration needed to produce a significant inhibition of fluid secretion was 100 μM. At this concentration it was possible that effects on P-type ATPases were occurring, although 100 μM is at the lower end of the sensitivity range for P-type ATPases. However, the availability of the NEM at the site of inhibition may be reduced, as it is found to inhibit membrane preparations at lower concentrations, it is then conceivable that NEM was inhibiting an enzyme activity at concentrations less than 100 μM, which is below the concentration level that inhibits other classes of ATPases. Previous studies on the effect of NEM on the rate of fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules have produced variable results (Marshall, 1995 and the present study Chapter 3). Weltens et al., (1992), working on the tubules of Formica polyctena found that a concentration of 500 μM reduced the rate of fluid secretion to 7%. However Al-Ahmadi (1993) looking at the tubules of Spodoptera littoralis discovered that 50% inhibition of fluid secretion occurred with 1 μM whilst complete inhibition occurred at 100 μM. Bertram et al., (1991) observed significant effects on the rate of fluid secretion by the Malpighian tubules of Drosophila hydei at concentrations greater than 10 μM, with complete inhibition occurring at 1 mM NEM. In a related study Dijkstra et al., (1994b) found
that 500\(\mu\)M NEM applied to the solution bathing the Malpighian tubules of *Formica* caused a drop in the short circuit current to 21% of the control value.

A NEM-bafilomycin A\(_1\) sensitive (V-type) ATPase was partially purified from the apical membrane-rich fractions of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. In the present study the properties of this enzyme were investigated. The preliminary results indicated that the ATPase activity was insensitive to both azide and orthovanadate which inhibit P-ATPases and F-ATPases respectively (Forgac, 1989; Nelson, 1992). However, the enzyme activity was extremely sensitive to bafilomycin A\(_1\) (95% inhibition at 10 nM), the activity was also sensitive to NEM (~85% inhibition at 10 \(\mu\)M). These inhibitor characteristics are similar to those reported in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* (Marshall, 1995), other insect secretory tissues (Wieczorek *et al.*, 1989; 1991; Bertram *et al.*, 1991; Weltens *et al.*, 1992; Bertram and Wessing, 1994), and in various tissues (Bowman *et al.*, 1988; Mattsson *et al.*, 1991). V-type ATPase activity was located in the midgut of *Manduca sexta* (Schweikl *et al.*, 1989) by similar procedures. These latter investigators prepared apical membrane-rich fractions from goblet cells and identified an ATPase activity which was azide and orthovanadate insensitive but sensitive to NEM (it was inhibited by ~50% at a concentration of approximately 1\(\mu\)M). In another related study Minami *et al.*, (1991) obtained significant inhibition of a midgut ATPase activity isolated from the brush border of *Bombyx mori* using 100\(\mu\)M NEM.

V-type ATPases are extremely sensitive to NEM and bafilomycin A\(_1\). NEM has been used in various studies to determine the presence of V-type ATPases in microsomal fractions (see review by Al-Awqati, 1986) by their high sensitivity to the inhibitor (\(I_{50}<100\mu\)M). This is below the value stated by Forgac (1989) needed to
inhibit P-type ATPases. In the present study concentrations of NEM up to 1mM were not found to inhibit Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity. NEM is an alkylating agent and is relatively selective for sulphydryl groups (Forgac, 1989) however it is possible that it could have general toxic effects (Weltens et al., 1992). Bafilomycin A₁, a macrolide antibiotic, has been shown to be an extremely potent inhibitor of V-type ATPases (Bowman et al., 1988). F-type ATPases were not affected by this substance. P-type ATPases were moderately sensitive, but could be distinguished from the V-type ATPases by their relative sensitivity to the inhibitor. Mattsson et al., (1991) also reported that bafilomycin A₁ was 10⁴ times less potent on P-type than V-type ATPases. Another advantage of using bafilomycin A₁ to investigate the V-type ATPase activity is that it has no general toxic effects, this was reported by Yoshimori et al., (1991) who studied its effects on lysosomes of living cultured cells.

Nitrate (NO₃⁻) is a well known inhibitor of anion ATPases. Anstee and Fathpour (1981) working on the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria, discovered that 20mM NaNO₃ caused the anion-stimulated activity to fall to 71.7% and 65.8% of control values in the presence of 20mM NaCl and 20mM NaHCO₃, respectively. In fact, nitrate inhibited the majority of the stimulation due to bicarbonate. Other workers have observed nitrate inhibition of anion-stimulated ATPases; Van Amelsvoort et al., (1977) discovered that nitrate caused the anion-stimulated ATPase activity of rabbit gastric mucosa to fall to 65% of the value recorded in the presence of Cl⁻. Ebel and Lardy (1975) reported that 20mM nitrate caused 50% inhibition of ATP hydrolysis in the presence of 20mM HCO₃, in rat liver mitochondrial ATPase. Also Izutsu and Siegel (1975) working on rat liver found that in the presence of 25mM nitrate ATPase activity became approximately half what it was in the presence of the incubation.
solution only. Nitrate is also a known inhibitor of V-type ATPases. O'Neill et al., (1983), and Bennett and Spanswick (1983) demonstrated a nitrate sensitive H⁺-ATPase from corn roots, this activity was also stimulated by anions but inhibited by DCCD. The vacuolar ATPase of *Saccharomyces carlsbergensis* was sensitive to nitrate and Bowman (1983) comparing the sensitivity of the V-type ATPase of *N. Crassa* to mitochondrial and plasma membrane ATPases, found only the V-type activity was sensitive to nitrate.

The biochemical experiments in the present study were carried out to assess the properties of V-type ATPase activity. In this study the optimal pH required for maximal V-type ATPase activity was pH 7.5. It had previously been determined in mammalian kidney brush border as 7.4 (Ait-Mohamed et al., 1986; Wang and Gluck, 1990). In contrast the optimum pH for V-type ATPase from midgut of *Manduca sexta* was recorded at pH 8.3 (Wieczorek et al., 1986).

The present study located a K⁺-stimulated ATPase activity to the apical membrane of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*, maximum stimulation occurring at 30mM KCl. The ATPase was also stimulated by various other salts, the maximum stimulation was achieved at (concentration in mM) 70NaHCO₃, 70KHCO₃, 40K gluconate, 30KBr, 30KSO₄, 50Tris, 20KF, 50choline Cl, 40NaCl, 40RbCl, and 40LiCl. The effect of the same concentration (30mM) of these various salts on ATPase activity was investigated. The results are shown in Table, 5.1. Bicarbonate salts were a potent stimulator of activity. The Na salt causing 152.4 ± 8.4% and the K salt 142.4 ± 18.4%. Chloride salts also caused increase in activity in the following ascending order RbCl, LiCl, choline Cl, NaCl, KCl and Tris-HCl. Comparing potassium salts, KNO₃ caused inhibition of activity but the other salts tested all raised activity in the following
ascending order KBr, KF, KSO₄, K gluconate, KCl and KHCO₃. The chloride and bicarbonate salts of potassium caused a significantly larger increase in activity when compared to other tested. This suggests the activity was sensitive to these anions.

Table 5.1. Influence of various salts on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Salt (30 mM)</th>
<th>Relative specific activity of V-type ATPase (Mean ± SEM)</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No salt*</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KCl</td>
<td>202.3 ± 17.1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaCl</td>
<td>191.0 ± 17.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Choline CI</td>
<td>171.3 ± 20.3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RbCl</td>
<td>134.7 ± 11.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LiCl</td>
<td>150.1 ± 9.8</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KHCO₃</td>
<td>242.4 ± 18.4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaHCO₃</td>
<td>252.4 ± 8.4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tris-HCl</td>
<td>241.5 ± 20.1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KBr</td>
<td>125.9 ± 2.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K Gluconate</td>
<td>140.4 ± 14.0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KSO₄</td>
<td>138.3 ± 8.2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KF</td>
<td>130.3 ± 11.6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KNO₃</td>
<td>29.2 ± 2.1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* (No salt) Unstimulated ATPase activity obtained in assay medium: 1mM MgCl₂, 5mM Tris-HCl, 0.1mM EDTA, 0.5mM NaN₃ and 0.1mM Na₃VO₄, pH 7.5. The specific activity recorded in this assay medium was depended on each salt experiment (see appendix 5).

p values obtained by comparison of activity in the presence and absence of salt by Student’s t-test.

Similar results are reported by Marshall (1995). However, Fogg et al., (1991) did not find an ATPase on the apical membrane of the tubules of Locusta that was stimulated by K⁺. The finding of Fogg et al., (1991) agreed with that of Keynes (1973) who could not demonstrate a K⁺-stimulated ATPase in the midgut of Cecropia.
However, other related studies on insect tissues have been able to locate a $K^+$-stimulated ATPase.

Wolfersberger (1979) demonstrated the existence of a $K^+$-modulated ATPase in the midgut of *Manduca sexta*. Later Wieczorek (1982) reported an ATPase activity in the proboscis of a fly that was insensitive to azide and stimulated by $K^+$, this enzyme activity was further characterized by Wieczorek and Gnatzy (1985) who found the ATPase activity could also be stimulated by $Na^+$ and $Rb^+$. Deaton (1984) working on the midgut of *Manduca sexta* was also able to locate a $K^+$-stimulated activity, the optimal activity was produced with 25mM $K^+$; optimum pH was 7.5. Wieczorek *et al.*, (1986) working on the same tissue found maximum stimulation at 30mM KCl and $\sim$pH 8. In agreement with the present study they also showed that the enzyme activity could be stimulated by various anions, e.g. KBr, KF and KHCO$_3$ but was inhibited by KNO$_3$. The $K^+$ stimulation was confirmed in a later study (Schweikl *et al.*, 1989) as well as the demonstration that the ATPase was stimulated by different anions and cations but still inhibited by nitrate.

One explanation for the active transport of $K^+$ across epithelia such as Malpighian tubules, midgut and salivary glands, was that it was achieved by a $K^+$-ATPase (Harvey *et al.*, 1983b) which was located in portasomes on the apical membrane. This ATPase activity was later referred to as an alkali metal ion pump due to its relatively unspecific nature (Wieczorek *et al.*, 1986). However, now it is generally accepted that it is a V-type ATPase activity which is responsible for $K^+$ transport, this would be stimulated by $K^+$. The biochemical properties of the enzyme activity reported in this chapter in conjunction with ultrastructural and immunocytochemical evidence confirm that a V-type ATPase exists on the apical
surface of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*. It is proposed that in common with other insect secretory epithelia in which a V-type ATPase is present, that this enzyme, in parallel with an antiporter, is responsible for the active transport of $K^+$ across the apical membrane which in turn is the driving force for fluid secretion (Wessing and Zierold, 1996).

The V-type ATPase was stimulated by a variety of different anions and cations; $\text{HCO}_3^-$ was found to be the most potent cationic activator of ATPase activity and the only anions which inhibited activity were nitrate and thiocyanate. The anion stimulation was inhibited by NEM, a typical inhibitor of V-type ATPase activity and thiocyanate a typical anion-stimulated ATPase inhibitor. These findings suggest that the $\text{HCO}_3^-$-stimulated activity could represent, in part, an anion-sensitive V-type ATPase, this proposal was tentatively suggested by Fogg *et al.*, (1991).

The data in Table 5.1 suggest that the V-type ATPase is non-specifically stimulated by a variety of monovalent cations. The fact that the enzyme is activated by both choline and Tris suggest that this may be an ionic activation effect and so may not be directly related to cation transport. However, it is more likely that the enzyme responses to stimulation with $\text{HCO}_3^-$ and inhibition by $\text{NO}_3^-$ and so is affected by specific anions.

In the present study, comparison of P5 V-type ATPase and $\text{HCO}_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activities revealed that the anion-stimulated ATPase exhibited some characteristics which were relatively similar to V-type ATPase activity. Like V-type ATPase activity, the apical rich-membrane fraction $\text{HCO}_3^-$-stimulated ATPase activity was shown to be insensitive to azide and orthovanadate. On other hand, the anion -
stimulated ATPase does exhibit some different characteristics which emerge when the sensitivity of the anion-stimulated ATPase to bafilomycin A₁ and NEM is compared to that of the V-type ATPase. The V-type ATPase activity is inhibited by nanomolar concentrations of bafilomycin A₁, however, HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase is only substantially inhibited at higher concentrations of 10 and 100µM (Marshall, 1995). At these concentrations it is possible that P-type ATPases are affected therefore the enzyme activity cannot be confirmed as a V-type ATPase on the basis of its sensitivity to this inhibitor. Likewise NEM only causes a noticeable reduction of the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase activity at values of 100µM and 1mM. At these levels P-type ATPases may also be inhibited. A possible explanation for some of these differences in sensitivity could be due to the difference in the assay media. When investigating V-type ATPase activity azide and orthovanadate were included in the assay medium and these inhibitors would eliminate most ATPase activity associated with P- or F-type ATPases. However these inhibitors were not included in the assay medium when HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase was monitored hence it is possible that there would be a persistent amount of Mg²⁺-ATPase activity present in the preparation which would not be inhibited by bafilomycin A₁ and NEM.
CHAPTER 6

Partial purification and immunocytochemical localization studies on the apical and basal membrane-rich fractions molecular biology technique.

INTRODUCTION

The V-type ATPase proton pump most commonly functions in the acidification of cytoplasmic vesicles and vacuoles and it is present in most eukaryotic cells (Nelson, 1992). First identified in organelles, it is also localized in the plasma membrane of vertebrate transporting epithelia, such as frog skin (Harvey, 1992), in osteoclasts (Chatterjee et al., 1992) and in kidney (Brown et al., 1992). The V-type ATPase is arranged in two structural sectors, a peripheral or \( V_1 \) sector and an integral or \( V_o \) sector. The peripheral sector is composed of multiple subunits and, among others, it contains the catalytic subunit A and the regulatory subunit B, both of which possess ATP binding sites. Three molecules of both A and B are thought to be present in \( V_1 \) in a single ATPase complex (Nelson, 1992; for reviews of V-type ATPases, see Harvey and Nelson, 1992; Dow 1994). The \( V_o \) sector is mainly composed of the putative proton channel formed by six copies of a protein known as subunit c or 16 kDa proteolipid, with molecular masses ranging from 15 to 18 kDa depending on the organism (Meagher et al., 1990; Mandel et al., 1988; Hanada et al., 1991; Hasebe et al., 1992; Dow et al., 1992; Pietrantonio and Gill, 1993; 1995).

Immunocytochemical localization of V-type ATPase has been demonstrated in various tissues (Gluck and Caldwell, 1987; Pouyet et al., 1992; Sasaki et al., 1994; Wang and Gluck, 1990; Brown et al., 1992; Fok et al., 1993; Sekiguchi et al., 1992; Bastani, 1995). Brown et al., (1988a,b; 1992) prepared monoclonal and polyclonal
antibodies against the isolated kidney V-type ATPase, allowing its location in the kidney to be established by immunocytochemistry. These experiments confirmed that the kidney V-type ATPase resides in the plasma membrane of the renal tubular epithelial cells in the same segments of the nephron in which proton pumps had been identified in physiological studies (Gluck and Al-Awqati, 1984 and for reviews see Forgac, 1989; Gluck and Nelson, 1992).

In insect tissue purification of the V-type ATPase from the plasma membrane of *Manduca sexta* midgut offered the possibility to produce polyclonal and monoclonal antibodies against this enzyme (Russell *et al.*, 1992). V-type ATPase was immunocytochemically detectable in the apical membrane of Malpighian tubules and other insect epithelia (Russell *et al.*, 1992; Schweikl *et al.*, 1989; Wieczorek *et al.*, 1989; 1990; Klein *et al.*, 1991; Klein, 1992; Just and Walz, 1994; Pietrantonio and Gill, 1993; 1995). Furthermore, in a comparative immunological study (Klein and Zimmermann, 1991) demonstrated a V-type ATPase in Malpighian tubules of *M. sexta* and sensillae of *Antherea pernyi*. Crude homogenate fractions from these tissues were tested in immunoblots after SDS-PAGE with the immune serum directed to the enzyme. The polyclonal antibodies were found to cross react with protein bands corresponding in size to the main subunits of the midgut V-type ATPase (Schweikl, *et al.*, 1989). Furthermore, immune sera directed against the whole enzyme or single subunits of xenic V-type ATPases from plant tonoplast and bovine chromaffin granules cross reacted in immunoblots with corresponding subunits of the midgut V-type ATPase (Russell, *et al.*, 1992). These results suggested that a V-type ATPase may be a common constituent of insect plasma membranes bearing the K⁺ pump, as an
alternative to the classical concept of plasma membrane energizing in animal cells by

When monoclonal antibodies directed against defined subunits of the midgut V-
type ATPase were used to probe microscopical sections of the midgut epithelium
(Klein et al., 1991; Klein, 1992; Russell, et al., 1992), they demonstrated the
localization of the V-type ATPase in agreement with the biochemical findings
(Wieczorek, et al., 1986; Schweikl, et al., 1989). As analysed by light and electron
microscopy, clear labeling of the antibodies was found in the folding of the goblet cell

Cytochemical localization studies on other insect epithelia such as the salivary
glands of Periplaneta americana (Just and Walz, 1994) and ovarian follicles of the M.
sexta (Janssen et al., 1995) also demonstrated the presence of V-type ATPase. Apical
enriched membrane fractions produced from the Malpighian tubules of Locusta
contained a protein (~28 kDa) which was recognized by antibody 230-3 specific for a
subunit of Manduca midgut V-type ATPase (Marshall, 1995). The apical localization
of plasma membrane V-type ATPase in Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria
(Marshall, 1995) was also indicated in fluorescence immunocytochemical studies using
monoclonal antibody 230-3 specific for a subunit of Manduca midgut V-type ATPase.

Other insect ion-transporting epithelia were found to contain a V-type ATPase on their
apical membrane when they were probed immunocytochemically. Malpighian tubules
of Manduca sexta were labelled in fluorescence immunocytochemistry at their brush
border by the monoclonal antibodies to the Manduca sexta midgut V-type ATPase as
well as by the polyclonal antibodies to the plant tonoplast V-type ATPase (Klein et al.,
membrane of the saturniid moth *Antheraea pernyi* was examined with monoclonal antibodies to the *Manduca sexta* midgut V-type ATPase by light and electron microscopy (Klein, 1992; Klein and Zimmermann, 1991).

In the present study immunocytochemical using microgradient native and SDS electrophoresis and immunogold localization techniques were used to confirm the conclusion from the biochemical study (chapter 5) that the V-type ATPase activity was located on the apical membrane of *Locusta migratoria*. 
Gel Electrophoresis:

Native microgradient polyacrylamide gels:

Preparation of linear microgradient polyacrylamide gels:

The method was performed according to Schweikl et al., (1989) and Hames (1990), with slight modifications. The apparatus producing linear microgradient slab gels is shown in Figure (6.1). In this study two acrylamide mixtures, 15% and 3% concentrations, were prepared according to the details in (Table 6.1).

Table 6.1 Gel mixtures for a 3-15% native microgradient separating gel and 3% stacking gel

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stock reagents</th>
<th>3%</th>
<th>15%</th>
<th>Stacking gel 3%</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Acrylamide-bisacrylamide (30:0.8)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.5 M Tris-HCl (pH 8.8)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5 M Tris-HCl (pH 6.8)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10% Triton 100-X</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deionized water</td>
<td>12.7</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>12.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glycerol</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10% ammonium persulphate</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEMED</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.02</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The columns represent volumes (ml) of the various reagents required to make 20 ml of gel mixture.

Ammonium persulphate and TEMED were added after degassing to initiate polymerization just before pouring the gel.

The protocol was as follows:

1) The gel mixtures were degassed to prevent premature polymerization.

2) TEMED and ammonium persulphate were added just before the gel was poured.
**Figure 6.1** Apparatus for the formation of microgradient polyacrylamide slab gels.

A and B refer to the reservoir and mixing chambers of the gradient maker, respectively. B was suspended about 1.5 cm above the magnetic stirrer by a clamp. Chamber B connected to A by a tunnel controlled by a clip. The two chambers A and B must be of exactly equal cross-section and are joined by an inter-connecting tunnel controlled by a two-way tap. The outlet from the gradient marker is connected via fine-bore Silicon tubing (1.6mm, inner diameter) to a peristaltic pump and then to the glass-plate sandwich which has been previously assembled. The silicon tubing is cut at an angle of 45° and the cut edge taped in position facing the rear (un-notched) plate at the centre of the assembly. According to this procedure, the most concentrated acrylamide solution enters the glass-plate sandwich first and runs down the inside of the un-notched glass plate to reach the gel bottom. As the level of acrylamide mixture rises in the sandwich, the acrylamide concentration steadily decreases.

The exact composition of the acrylamide mixtures used for gradient gel preparation will depend on the desired concentration range of the gradient and the buffer system used.
3) The low concentration mixture was added to reservoir A (Figure 6.1) and the connecting tube between the chambers of the gradient maker opened to fill it and then closed. Any gel solution which flowed into mixing chamber B was returned to reservoir A.

4) An equal volume of each mixture was now added to each chamber, 3.8 ml of each volume was calculated to correspond to half the volume of the final resolving gel. Chamber B can be mixed using a magnetic stirrer in which case care must be taken, to prevent heat from the magnetic stirrer causing premature polymerization. To avoid this, the gradient maker was supported (using a clamp) about 1.5 cm above the stirrer.

5) The chambers of the gradient maker were connected and the peristaltic pump and stirrer turned on, the clip undone and the peristaltic pump (Watson-Marlow, 505S) turned on the rate of the gel mixture into the glass-plate sandwich was about 3.0 ml/min (35 rpm).

6) Immediately after gel was poured it was overlaid by dipping the outlet tubing into a flask containing a buffer the same composition as in the gel mixture (7.5 ml of 1.5M Tris-HCl pH 8.8, 0.3 ml of 10% Triton 100-X, 22.2 ml of deionized water) and the flow rate reduced to 0.5 ml/min (15 rpm) (Hames 1990).

7) After polymerization of the slab gel (30 min), the overlay was removed by tilting the gel and a stacking gel (Table 6.1) was poured.

8) The comb was immediately inserted into the stacking gel mixture, being careful to avoid trapping any air bubbles beneath it.

9) The assembly was left undisturbed whilst the stacking gel polymerized (30 min.).
10) After polymerization, the comb was carefully removed to expose the sample wells, which were rinsed-out and then filled with reservoir buffer. Any divisions between wells that had become displaced during comb removal were straightened with a syringe needle, care being taken to avoid damage.

**Sample preparation and electrophoresis:**

The following procedure was based on the method described by Schweikl *et al.*, (1989) with minor modifications. The enriched apical-membrane pellet (P5) was produced as described previously. This was resuspended in the following buffer: 10mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.5, 0.32mM EDTA and 5% glycerol containing 1% Triton X-100. This mixture was then put on ice and stirred for 10 min before being centrifuged at 100,000xg for 1 hour, using a 12 x 10 rotor, in a Beckman L-70 Ultracentrifuge. The supernatant containing the solubilized enzyme was then mixed in a 1:1 ratio with sample buffer consisting of 125mM Tris-HCl, pH 6.8, 20% (v/v) glycerol and 0.02% (w/v) tracking dye, bromophenol blue (modified from Laemmli, 1970).

"Running" buffer (0.025M Tris-HCl, pH 8.3, 0.192M glycine) was added to the lower chamber and the same buffer with 0.1% Triton X-100 to the upper chamber (Dewald *et al.*, 1974). The gel surface was washed by directing a gentle stream of running buffer into each sample well using a Pasteur pipette. Before loading the sample the gel was pre-electrophoresed for a period of time (30-40 min), to remove traces of chemicals such as residual ammonium persulphate or acrylic acid which might reduce the biological activity of proteins (Hames, 1990).
10μl volumes of samples were carefully loaded into the wells using a microsyringe. The tip of the sample applicator was held only 1-2 mm above the gel surface to minimize sample mixing with the running buffer during loading. The unused wells were filled with an equivalent volume of blank sample buffer. The gel was run at 20 mA constant current, using a mini electrophoresis system (Anachem, MVI-DC) with power supply from Anachem, (Power Pac, PSU-400/200), for about 6-7 h at 4°C or until the tracking dye which was bromophenol blue reached the lower end of the gel.

**Detection of ATPase and alkaline phosphatase Activity in gels:**

The incubation and localization procedure followed that described by Schweikl et al., (1989), and Gabriel (1974). The incubation medium: 5mM MgSO₄ and 100mM Tris-HCl (final concentrations), pH 7.5, was thermoequilibrated for 15 min at 35°C, in a waterbath. The gel was added and thermoequilibrated for 15 min before 5mM (final concentration) ATP (ATPase) or β-glycerophosphate (alkaline phosphatase) was added as substrate. The gel was left for 1 hour. At the end of this time it was washed in deionized distilled water and then 2.5mM of lead acetate in 80mM Tris maleate, pH 8.0, was added. Incubation was continued for a further 30 min at room temperature, gels were then thoroughly washed in DDW. Finally, the gels were placed in aqueous 2% ammonium sulphide for at least 2 min and rinsed for 1 hour in deionized distilled water with frequent changes. Dark brown precipitate represented the site of ATPase/alkaline phosphatase activity.

**Microgradient SDS-PAGE:**

The buffer system (discontinuous gels) for the microgradient SDS PAGE (3-15%) is shown in Table (6.2) the methods used was performed according to
Laemmli (1970), and the method was essentially the same as described previously in native microgradient PAGE. Samples (enriched-membrane fractions from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*) were dissolved in sample buffer containing 62.5mM Tris-HCl, pH 6.8, 10% (v/v) glycerol, 10% (w/v) SDS, 5% (v/v) 2-mercaptoethanol and 0.01% (w/v) bromophenol blue. These were heated for 5 min at 100°C in a water bath, then allowed to cool at room temperature. To remove any insoluble material, the samples were centrifuged at 15,000g for 10 min at 4°C. Approximately equal amounts of protein (~15μg) were loaded onto a 3-15% microgradient gel in each lane. The gels were run at a constant voltage, 50mV for 30 min, then at 150mV for 3-4 hours, at room temperature, using a mini-electrophoresis system (Anacham, MVI-DC) and an Anachem PowerPac PSU-400/200. Gels were fixed and stained for protein using 0.25% (w/v) Coomassie Blue in 40% (v/v) methanol and 10% (v/v) acetic acid. Destaining was effected in a solution containing 40% methanol and 10% acetic acid.

**Table 6.2 Gel mixtures for a 3-15% SDS microgradient separating gel and 3.9% stacking gel**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stock reagents</th>
<th>3%*</th>
<th>15%*</th>
<th>Stacking gel 3.9%</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Acrylamide-bisacrylamide (30:0.8)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.5 M Tris-HCl (pH 8.8)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5 M Tris-HCl (pH 6.8)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10% SDS</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deionized water</td>
<td>12.7</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>12.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glycerol</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10% ammonium persulphate</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEMED</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.02</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* The columns represent volumes (ml) of the various reagents required to make 20 ml of gel mixture.
Ammonium persulphate and TEMED were added after degassing to initiate polymerization just before pouring the gel.
Western blots of microgradient PAGE:

Proteins were blotted from acrylamide gels to nitrocellulose using the semi-dry blotting method of Kyhse-Andersen (1984). Each transfer unit (containing one gel) comprised a sandwich arrangement of a sheet of 3MM paper, a sheet of nitrocellulose, the gel to be blotted and another sheet of 3MM paper. Transfer was carried out on a Bio-Rad Trans-blot, semi-dry transfer cell using the following procedure:

1) The nitrocellulose membrane and pieces of 3MM paper were cut to the size of the gel and pre-soaked in transfer buffer (48mM Tris, pH 9.2, 39mM glycine, 0.0375g/l (w/v) SDS and 20% methanol) for 15min (Bjerrum and Schafer-Nielsen, 1986).

2) The corner of the gel was cut off to mark its orientation and then the gel was equilibrated in transfer buffer for 15min.

3) Soaked nitrocellulose membrane was placed onto 3MM paper, and then the gel was placed on top followed by a layer of 3MM paper.

4) Each mini-gel was transferred at 25V and 220mA (5.5mA/cm²) for 1hour using a power pack (Anachem, PSU-400/200).

5) After blotting, the nitrocellulose membrane was removed and transferred immediately into blocking solution (PBS, 5% Marvel and 1% Tween-20) for 1hour at room temperature.

6) The blot was then incubated with the primary antibody (230-3, raised against to ~28kDa subunit of Manduca sexta midgut V-type ATPase) in anti-sera buffer (PBS, 5%
skimmed milk and 0.1% Tween-20) overnight, at 4°C, with shaking. Best results were obtained using 1:4000 dilution.

7) The primary monoclonal antibodies, directed to the V-ATPase from insect plasma membrane (midgut of *Manduca sexta* larvae) were kindly supplied by Prof. Dr. Ulla Klein, Laboratory Wieczorek, Zoological Institute of the University of Munich.

8) The nitrocellulose membrane was then washed 3x5min in anti-sera buffer before incubation with the secondary antibody for 2hour, at room temperature, with shaking. The secondary antibody used was a goat anti-mouse IgG (H+L) horseradish peroxidase conjugate (from Bio-Rad Cat. No. 170-6516) at 1:5000 dilution. At the end of this time the membrane was washed in PBS/ 0.1% Tween-20 for 2x5min and 1x15min, with shaking.

9) Finally, the membrane was rinsed in distilled water for 2x5min. The membrane was then kept in distilled water.

**ECL detection of V-type ATPase:**

ECL or enhanced chemiluminescence is a non-radioactive, light emitting method for the detection of immobilized antigens conjugated directly or indirectly with horseradish peroxidase labelled antibodies. These steps were carried out quickly in the dark:

i) Equal volumes of detection reagents 1 and 2 (Amersham's ECL detection system) were mixed together, such that the total volume was 0.125ml/cm² membrane.

ii) The excess water was drained from the membrane.

iii) Detection reagent was poured onto the membrane (protein side up) and left for 1min.
iv) The membrane was drained as before and then placed between acetate sheets in a cassette.

v) The membrane was exposed to film for 5min.

**Immunogold electron microscopy:**

The method used was according to Klein *et al.* (1991) and Just and Walz (1994). *Locusta* Malpighian tubules were dissected out in cold PLP fixative (2% paraformaldehyde, 0.075M lysine, 0.01M sodium periodate in 0.1M sodium phosphate buffer, pH 7.3) and then fixed for 3 hours at 4°C. They were then washed in 0.1M sodium phosphate buffer, 3 x 5 min. Samples were then dehydrated in a graded ethanol series (12.5, 25, 50, 70%) 3 x 10 min each. Samples were infiltrated with a 2:1 mixture of LR white : 70% ethanol for 1.5 hour, then transferred to LR white only for 1h and then to fresh LR white, overnight, on a rotamix at room temperature. In the morning, the LR white was changed once more and then the samples were embedded in LR white in gelatine capsules. Capsules were polymerized at 50°C for 24 hour.

Thin sections were cut on an ultramicrotome and collected on uncoated nickel grids.

The following protocol for immunolabelling thin sections was followed (all steps were carried out in a moist chamber at room temperature and all solutions were sterile filtered before contact with the sections):

I) Grids were pre-incubated on 25μl droplets of the following, in sequence:

1) PBS (150mM NaCl in 10mM phosphate buffer pH, 7.4)

2) 50mM NH₄Cl in PBS.

3) 0.01% Tween 20 in PBS.
4) PBS.

5) Blocking buffer (0.1% gelatine, 1% bovine serum albumin (BSA) in PBS. Each step lasting 10 min.

II) The grids were transferred to a 25μl droplet of primary antibodies diluted 1/500 in the 0.1% BSA/PBS buffer, pH 7.4), for 48 hour at 4°C in a moist chamber.

The primary antibodies used were:

1) Monoclonal antibody 230-3 raised against to 28kDa subunit of the V-type ATPase of Manduca sexta midgut.

2) Monoclonal antibody IgG α-5 to the α-subunit of avian Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase

III) Grids were then washed to remove unbound primary antibodies by placing them on a 50μl droplet of blocking buffer for 5 min x 5.

IV) Grids were transferred to a 25μl droplet of gold conjugate (15nm gold-conjugated goat anti-mouse IgG antibody; Bioclin immunogold reagent - GAM15) diluted 1:20 in PBS buffer, pH 8.2, for 1 hour.

V) Unbound gold conjugate was removed by placing grids on 50μl droplets of PBS and distilled water for 2 min x 5.

VI) Sections were left to dry before staining in 2% aqueous uranyl acetate for 10 min.

Controls consisted of either omitting the primary antibodies and replacing them with buffer or using one of the other antibodies which did not recognize the locust V-type ATPase or Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase.
Chapter 6

RESULTS

Section I

Detection of apical membrane-rich fraction enzyme activities:

Following successful native microgradient electrophoretic separation, the gel assays were carried out as quickly thereafter as possible. The gels were incubated in reaction media with appropriate substrate as described previously.

The results obtained are shown in Plate (6.1). When the gels were incubated in media containing ATP as substrate, two enzyme activity bands were revealed (Plate 6.1, lane A). However, in the presence of β-glycerophosphate as substrate, only one band was observed (Plate 6.1, lane F). This band represents alkaline phosphatase activity and was identical in position to the lower band shown in Plate 6.1, lane A, suggesting that the activity corresponding to this latter band hydrolysed ATP and β-glycerophosphate as substrates.

An investigation into the effect of various inhibitors on the enzyme activities located on the gels was carried out by incubation of the gels in reaction media as previously described. Plate 6.1, lanes B and C, shows that only the upper band was sensitive to bafilomycin A1 and NEM, specific inhibitors of V-type ATPase. However, the ATPase activity presenting in the upper band (Plate 6.1, lanes D and E) was not inhibited by azide or orthovanadate respectively.
Plate 6.1

Native microgradient PAGE of the apical membrane ATPase activity from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

A: The gel was stained for ATPase activity by incubation for 1 hour at 35 °C in substrate solution containing 5 mM ATP, 5 mM MgSO₄, 100 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.5. Then the gel was washed in dionize water and incubated in a solution containing 2.5 mM lead acetate in 80 mM Tris-malate, pH 7, for 30 min. To visualize the white lead salt precipitates, gel was incubated with 2% ammonium sulphide which turned precipitates dark brown.

B: In the presence of 5 μM Bafilomycin A₁.

C: In the presence of 10 mM NEM.

D: In the presence of 100 mM sodium azide (NaN₃).

E: In the presence of 1 mM orthovanadate (Na₃VO₄).

F: Exactly the same procedure was followed as described above for Plate 6.1, A apart from the fact that the reaction medium contained 5 mM β-glycerophosphate as the substrate instead of ATP.
Western blotting of native microgradient PAGE:

Using an identical gel, the enzyme activities were transferred to a nitrocellulose membrane and incubated with monoclonal antibody 230-3 to the V-type ATPase of *M. sexta*. The results are shown in Plate 6.2. It can be seen that the results are consistent with the detection of enzyme activity assays referred to above. The antibody recognized the upper band (Plate 6.2, lane B), indicating that this band represented a V-type ATPase present in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

Specificity of V-type ATPase to apical membrane:

The different enriched-membrane fractions, (mitochondrial P2, basal P4 and apical P5) were prepared as described previously, and separated by microgradient SDS-PAGE (Plate 6.3, lanes A, B and C, respectively). The observed proteins were then transferred to a nitrocellulose membrane and probed with antibody 230-3 against the 28kDa subunit of *Manduca sexta* midgut V-type ATPase. Plate 6.4, lane A, represents a western blot of lane C and shows that the antibody immunoreacted to the 28kDa subunit of the apical rich-membrane fraction (P5). No reactivity was observed with any subunit in the other membrane fractions. These results show that V-type ATPase was only present in the apical membrane fraction of Malpighian tubule cells of *Locusta migratoria*.
Plate 6.2

Two microgradient gels prepared as those as described previously for Plate 6.1, A.

Lane A: The gel was stained for ATPase activity using lead capture technique.

Lane B: The gel was probed with antibody 230-3, to the 28kDa subunit of the midgut V-type ATPase of *Manduca sexta*. ECL was used for detection.
Plate 6.3

Two microgradient gels were prepared in exactly the same way and run simultaneously using the same equipment. One was stained with Coomassie blue (Lanes B, C and D) and one used for Western blotting (Plate 6.4 Lane A).

Stained microgradient SDS-PAGE gel. Lanes A, B, D and E represented different protein samples:

- Lane A: Enriched mitochondrial membrane fraction.
- Lane B: Enriched basal membrane fraction.
- Lane C: Enriched apical membrane fraction.
- Lane D: Molecular weight markers.

Plate 6.4

Lane A: Western blot of a microgradient gel identical to the one shown above. The blot was probed with a monoclonal antibody 230-3, to the 28kDa subunit of the midgut V-type ATPase of Manduca sexta. The antibody recognized a protein band of similar molecular weight present only in the apical-enriched membrane fraction of the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria.
Section II

Immunogold localization of V-type ATPase:

Monoclonal antibody 230-3 raised against the V-type ATPase from the midgut of *Manduca sexta* was used to investigate the presence of a V-type ATPase in *Locusta* Malpighian tubules.

Thin sections of Malpighian tubules probed with the antibody showed specific binding to the apical region of the cross-sections (Plates 6.5 A and B). This apical region was the site of the microvilli where the electron-dense 10-nm particles were situated (Klein *et al.*, 1991; Klein, 1992; Marshall, 1995). No staining was observed in any other region of Malpighian tubule cell (Plates 6.5 A and B). When antibody 230-3 was replaced by non-immune serum in control experiments, no specific labeling could be detected in any part of the cell (Plate 6.5C).

Immunogold localization of Na\(^+/\)K\(^+\) ATPase:

Monoclonal antibody IgG α 5 raised against the catalytic subunit of the chicken sodium pump (Takeyasu *et al.*, 1988) was used to map the distribution of the Na\(^+/\)K\(^+\) - ATPase in the cells of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. Plates (6.6A and B) illustrate the results demonstrated by electron microscopy. Cross-sections through the Malpighian tubules show that the gold labeling was confined to the basal region of the cell. No specific binding was detected at the apical surface (Plate 6.6C).
Plates 6.5A and B

A: Electron micrographs showing immunogold localization of V-type ATPase in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. The sections were labelled with primary monoclonal antibody 230-3, to midgut V-type ATPase of *Manduca sexta*. The secondary antibody, GAM-IgG, was coupled to 15-nm colloidal gold. The microvilli (MV) of the Malpighian tubules cell are intensely stained by 230-3 (small arrows).

*Scale* = 2\(\mu\)m.

B: Higher magnification of part of the microvillar border.

*Scale* = 0.5\(\mu\)m.

N: Nucleus.
Plate 6.5C

Electron micrograph showing the control of immunogold localization of V-type ATPase. The primary monoclonal antibody 230-3 was replaced with buffer contained (0.1% BSA/PBS buffer, pH, 7.4) and the secondary antibody, GAM-IgG. Note that there is no specific staining at apical region of the Malpighian tubules cell. A dense bodies (BD) were present.

Scale = 10μm.
Plate 6.6A and B

A: Electron micrographs showing immunogold localization of Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. The sections were labelled with primary monoclonal antibody IgG \(\alpha\) 5 to \(\alpha\)-subunit of avian Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase. The secondary antibody, GAM-IgG, was coupled to 15-nm colloidal gold. Note that the immunoreactivity is found on the basal part of Malpighian tubules cell (small arrows).

*Scale* = 1\(\mu\)m.

B: Higher magnification of part of the basal region.

*Scale* = 0.5\(\mu\)m.

BM: Basal membrane.

BI: Basal infoldings.
Plate 6.6C

Electron micrograph showing the control of immunogold localization of Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase. The primary monoclonal antibody was replaced with buffer contained (0.1% BSA/PBS buffer, pH, 7.4) and the secondary antibody, GAM-IgG. Note that there is no specific staining at basal region of the Malpighian tubules cell.

*Scale* = 0.5µm.

BM: Basal membrane.

Mv: Microvilli.
Chapter 6

DISCUSSION

In the present study the apical membrane-enriched fraction was subjected to native microgradient gel electrophoresis. Gels were incubated with two different substrates. When the substrate used was β-glycerophosphate only one band resulted; this band could be attributed to alkaline phosphatase activity. However, when the gel was incubated with ATP, as a substrate, two bands became visible. The upper band of ATPase activity was inhibited by the specific V-type ATPase inhibitors (bafilomycin A1 and NEM) but was insensitive to azide or orthovanadate suggesting that this band represented sites of V-type ATPase activity. These findings are consistent with the clear biochemical evidence (see chapter 5) which demonstrated the presence of V-type ATPase activity in the apical membrane-enriched pellets prepared from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. This activity was associated with the fraction containing mainly apical plasma membranes and inhibited by bafilomycin A1 and NEM, whilst, it was insensitive to azide or orthovanadate. Similar results have been reported by Schweikl, *et al.*, (1989) when NEM inhibited two bands of ATPase activities in the native microgradient PAGE preparations of *Manduca sexta* midgut.

Further support for a V-type ATPase being located on the apical membrane was provided by probing a Western blot of apical membrane ATPases with V-type ATPase monoclonal antibody. A Western blot of the native microgradient gel, was probed with monoclonal antibody 230-3 (raised against 28kDa subunit midgut V-type ATPase of *Manduca sexta*), recognized a protein present in the apical membrane fraction corresponding to the band exhibiting V-type ATPase activity as revealed by lead capture studies. Therefore, it can be concluded that the 28kDa subunit of midgut...
V-type ATPase of *Manduca sexta* has a molecular weight similar to that present in the apical membrane V-type ATPase of Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. The localization of this molecule on the apical membrane of the Malpighian tubules has previously been confirmed by fluorescent labelling immunocytochemistry in *Manduca sexta* midgut (Russell *et al.*, 1992); Malpighian tubules of *Formica polyctena* (Garayo*oa et al.*, 1995); *Heliothis virescens* midgut and Malpighian tubules (Pietrantonio and Gill, 1995). Just and Walz (1994) using fluorescence labeling localized an H⁺-pump to 10nm-particles on the cytoplasmic surface of microvilli in the salivary glands of the cockroach *Periplaneta americana*.

In Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, Marshall (1995) produced fluorescent labeling of V-type ATPase at the apical surface. V-type ATPases are known to have high homology since polyclonal antibodies raised against subunits of plant and mammalian V-type ATPases recognized subunits of *Manduca sexta* midgut ATPase (Russell *et al.*, 1992). Monoclonal antibodies which had been raised to different subunits of the V-type ATPase present in *Manduca sexta* midgut were used to probe different membrane fractions of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, (Marshall 1995). This worker found that antibody 230-3 raised to the 28kDa subunit of the V-type ATPase from the midgut of *Manduca sexta*, recognized the same subunit in the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*, but, antibodies 221-67, 224-3 and 90-7 raised to the 67, both 56 and 20, and 28kDa subunits of the V-type ATPase in the midgut of *Manduca sexta*, respectively, did not cross react with the V-type ATPase from *Locusta* Malpighian tubules. This lack of recognition could be due to the epitope (the antigenic region of the *Manduca sexta* protein subunit) not being conserved between the corresponding subunits of the V-type ATPase in the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*. 
The 28kDa subunit is commonly acknowledged as part of the V-type ATPase (Graf et al., 1994a), hence, localization of this subunit on the apical surface of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta* supports biochemical, structural and physiological evidence that a V-type ATPase activity is present in the tubules. Zheng *et al.*, (1992) found that the 28kDa subunit of *Manduca sexta* midgut contained a nucleotide binding site, however, this could be a non-catalytic binding site as has been shown previously (Moriyama and Nelson, 1987). Graf *et al.*, (1994a) suggested that this subunit may be involved in membrane targeting. Recent discovery of a novel 14kDa subunit in *Manduca sexta* midgut (Graf *et al.*, 1994b) led to speculation that this was a unique part of plasma membrane V-type ATPase and not endomembrane V-type ATPase so perhaps this is how the enzyme is targeted.

More recent work by Sumner *et al.*, (1995) demonstrated that V-type ATPase activity could be regulated by the dissociation of the peripheral V₁ subunits from the ATPase, (V₁ comprising of at least subunits A, B and E) as it was found that during a larval/larval moult, the midgut of *Manduca sexta* displayed reduced K⁺ transport, which corresponded to the loss of the V₁ subunits from the polypeptide. Recently, Lepier *et al.*, (1996) provided an evidence that the tobacco hornworm V-ATPase contains a novel 13-kDa subunit which as a member of the peripheral V₁ complex. Since the 14-kDa subunit first cloned from *Manduca sexta* (Graf *et al.*, 1994b) has already been designated as subunit F (Nelson *et al.*, 1994), the 13-kDa subunit has been suggested as subunit G (Lepier *et al.*, 1996). Other study (Pietrantonio and Gill, 1995) showed for the first time the immunolocalization of the V₀ sector component or the 17 kDa subunit c in the midgut goblet cell apical membrane and in the Malpighian tubule apical membrane of lepidopteran larvae. These labeling patterns in tissue
sections of *Heliothis virescens* and *Manduca sexta* obtained with the anti-peptide antibody and with the anti-B subunit antiserum are similar to those shown with monoclonal antibodies against the midgut V-type ATPase V₁ sector in *Manduca sexta* midgut and Malpighian tubules by Klein *et al.*, (1991).

*Manduca sexta* goblet cell plasma membrane V-type ATPase is multi-subunit enzyme and similar to that reported from plant, fungi and other animal species. Other laboratories have reported, from studies using native gels, a holoenzyme size of 600-900 kDa, and denaturing SDS-PAGE analysis revealed that the V-ATPase composed of at least ten polypeptides of subunits of 67, 57, 40, 43, 28, 20, 17, 16, 14 and 13 kDa. In addition, there appear to be glycoproteins of 40 and 20 kDa. (Wieczorek, 1992; Dow, 1994; Graf *et al.*, 1992; 1994a,b; Pannabecker, 1995; Pietrantonio and Gill, 1995; Lepier *et al.*, 1996). It has been reported by Forgac (1989), that all V-type ATPases share at least three common subunits; 70kDa, 60kDa and 17kDa. Subunits A, B and E, which represent the 70kDa 60kDa and 28kDa polypeptides, respectively, have been cloned and sequenced from *Manduca sexta* midgut and these all show a high sequence homology to subunits from other sources (Graf *et al.*, 1992; 1994a,b; Novak *et al.*, 1992; Pietrantonio and Gill, 1995; Lepier *et al.*, 1996). The function of the different subunits is still being investigated but it has been proposed that subunit A, which has been shown to contain ATP and NEM binding sites, is the catalytic subunit and subunit B has a regulatory function (Nelson, 1989). The V-type ATPase present in *Manduca sexta* midgut also contains a proteolipid subunit of 16kDa, Dow *et al.*, (1992), cloned and sequenced this subunit from the tubules and midgut of *Manduca sexta* and found a high sequence homology to other 16kDa subunits. It is believed that
six of these subunits constitute the proton pore (Dow et al., 1992; Nelson 1989; Forgac, 1989).

In the present study, electron microscopy immunogold labeling with monoclonal antibody 230-3 (specific for the 28kDa subunit of midgut V-type ATPase of Manduca sexta), localized V-type ATPase to the microvilli of Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria, providing strong evidence that a V-type ATPase is localized at the apical plasma membrane. However, the fixation protocol resulted in relatively poor ultrastructural preservation of the tissue with only sparse and patchy immunogold labeling. Other studies have been produced a similar result for example, a V-type ATPase has been localized in Manduca sexta midgut (Klein et al., 1991; Klein et al., 1992; Russell et al., 1992), in sensilla epithelia (Klein and Zimmermann, 1991) and in salivary glands of the cockroach, Periplaneta americana (Just and Walz, 1994). Studies on vertebrate, (Brown et al., 1987) using immunogold labeling were also able to localize an H⁺-pump to particles studding toad urinary bladder.

The ultrastructure of the apical surface of the Malpighian tubules as revealed by electron microscopy, identified structures resembling portasomes on the cytoplasmic membrane of the microvilli. These particles stud the membranes of many ion transporting epithelia. They were first reported by Gupta and Berridge (1966) in rectal papillae of blowfly and since have been found in salivary gland of Calliphora (Berridge and Oschman, 1972), larval Malpighian tubules of Aedes taeniorhynchus (Bradley et al., 1982); sensilla of the fly Protophormia terraenovae (Wieczorek, 1982) and the midgut of Manduca sexta (Klein et al., 1991).
The ATPase of the inner mitochondrial membrane is located in spheres called $F_1$ particles which are anchored to the membrane by $F_0$ units (responsible for proton conduction). The main function of this class of ATPases is to couple the downhill movement of protons to ATP synthesis (Forgac, 1989). The similarity in the structure of the $F_1$ particles of mitochondria and the portasomes of ion translocating epithelia lead to the suggestion that they were involved in $K^+$ transport (Anderson and Harvey, 1966) and subsequently the site of a V-type ATPase (Klein et al., 1991). Since then studies have been carried out on the molecular structure of F-type and V-type ATPases (Forgac, 1989; Nelson, 1989) and these show that both ATPases are multi-subunit complexes with similar molecular masses. Support for the argument that these portasomes are the site of ion transport comes from evidence that particles of a similar appearance have been discovered on the cytoplasmic side of membranes known to have a V-type ATPase. These include fungal vacuoles: Bowman et al., (1989) examined the vacuolar membranes of Neurospora crassa and found ball and stalk structures similar in size but different in shape to the $F_1F_0$ particles. Treatment with nitrate removed the ball and stalk structures from the vacuolar membranes but had no effect on mitochondrial membranes. A similar study was carried out by Morre et al., (1991) on plant tonoplasts (vacuolar membrane) of soybean and the same results were found. Stadler and Tsukita (1984) investigating the synaptic vesicles of guinea pig brain showed that the vesicles contained an ATPase which was inhibited by DCCD. They also showed that the vesicles, which had "knob-like" protrusions on their surface, could be acidified.

In the present study, when monoclonal antibody IgG $\alpha$ 5 used in immunogold electron microscopy showed a specific binding to an epitope only on the basal
membrane of Malpighian tubules. Monoclonal antibody IgG α 5 has been raised against the catalytic α-subunit of the chicken sodium pump (Takeyasu et al., 1988; 1989; Lemas et al., 1992) where it recognizes all three isoforms (α1, α2, α3). The antibody cross-reacts with the α-subunits of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPases of other invertebrate epithelia (Drosophila melanogaster, Lebovitz et al., 1989; Apis mellifera, Baumann and Takeyasu 1993; Calliphora erythrocephala, Baumann et al., 1993; Periplaneta americana, Just and Walz, 1994). In Drosophila, only one gene for the Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase has been found and IgG α-5 binds specifically to the product of this gene (Lebovitz et al., 1989). The results in the present study confirm the membrane separation techniques in conjunction with electron microscopy studies (see chapter 4) which demonstrated the presence of sodium pump at the basal membrane of Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria. Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity has previously been reported in this tissue (Anstee and Bell, 1975; 1978; Anstee and Bowler, 1984; Anstee et al., 1986). Cytochemical localization studies revealed that this enzyme associated with the basal cell membrane of Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria (Fogg et al., 1992; Kalule-Sabiti, 1985). Indeed, localization of Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase has been reported on basolateral and basal cell membrane infoldings in several secreting epithelia, e.g., (avian salt gland, Ernst, 1972; alimentary tract of Locusta migratoria, Peacock, 1976; rectum of Aeshna cyanea larvae, Komnick and Achenbach, 1979).

In conclusion, the present study emphasizes the evidence produced by earlier studies which reported that monoclonal antibody 230-3, raised to the V-type ATPase from Manduca sexta midgut, was found to cross react with a protein only present in apical enriched membrane preparations of Malpighian tubules of Locusta. The apical
localization of the V-type ATPase was confirmed using immunocytochemical and immunogold electron microscopy.
CHAPTER 7

GENERAL DISCUSSION

A number of researchers have produced evidence which supports V-type ATPase activity being involved in ion and fluid transport across insect Malpighian tubules, e.g. in *Drosophila hydei*, (Bertram et al., 1991); *Drosophila melanogaster*, (Dow et al., 1994b); *Formica polyctena*, (Weltens et al., 1992; Dijkstra et al., 1994b) and *Manduca sexta*, (Klein et al., 1991; Klein, 1992; Zeiske, 1992). However, the present study demonstrated biochemically V-type ATPase like activity in apical membrane-enriched fractions of Malpighian tubules. Other researchers have biochemically characterized V-type ATPase activity in other epithelia (Wieczorek et al., 1986; Schweikl et al., 1989), as well as by other experimental approaches (Just and Walz, 1994; Schirmanns and Zeiske, 1994). Wieczorek et al., (1989) proposed that the V-type ATPase is involved in the mechanisms of ion and fluid secretion in transporting epithelia, by forming a component of the apical membrane electrogenic cation pump. It is suggested that the V-type ATPase produces a $H^+$ gradient which energizes an apical antiporter which is responsible for the extrusion of $K^+$ (Wieczorek et al., 1989; 1991). The present study has found that *Locusta migratoria* secretes a $K^+$-rich "urine". $K^+$ is known to be actively transported across the tubule cells, the transport from cell to lumen being by an electrogenic $K^+$ pump. It is tempting to suggest that, on the basis of the evidence presented here, that the V-type ATPase is involved in a similar capacity in the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*, i.e. energizing apical $K^+$ extrusion. The presence of a V-type ATPase in Malpighian tubules replaces the idea of a common cation pump, unique to insect tissues, with a universal mechanism for energization (Wieczorek et al., 1989; Dow, 1994).
The present study has produced evidence (Chapter 5) for the existence of both an HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase and V-type ATPase activities on the apical membrane. The V-type ATPase activity displayed some characteristic features of the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase; it was stimulated by a number of different anions and was inhibited by thiocyanate and nitrate. However, although these features suggest that the two enzymes represent the same entity, the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase was not sensitive to NEM and bafilomycin A₁ at levels that V-type ATPase activity was affected. Nevertheless, it is possible that a component of the HCO₃⁻-stimulated ATPase preparation is bafilomycin A₁-sensitive at concentrations specific for V-type ATPases and therefore can be ascribed to V-type ATPase activity. Fogg et al., (1991) proposed that the active extrusion of K⁺ across the apical membrane of the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria could be carried out by an anion-stimulated V-type ATPase situated on this membrane. However, that proposal was speculative.

Basal Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase activity was demonstrated using immunogold techniques and membrane separation methods in conjunction with biochemical studies. Ouabain inhibition of fluid secretion, accompanied by increased and decreased intracellular levels of Na⁺ and K⁺ respectively (Pivovarova et al., 1994b) and increased levels of Na⁺ in the "urine" (Marshall, 1995) indicated a role for this enzyme in fluid secretion. Other related studies support the existence of a Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase in the Malpighian tubules of Locusta migratoria, (Anstee and Bell, 1975; 1978; Donkin and Anstee, 1980; Anstee et al., 1986; Fogg, 1990; Fogg et al., 1991). Ouabain-binding studies on this tissue revealed substantial K⁺ transport could be carried out by the Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase (Anstee et al., 1986). Hence it is proposed that the basal Na⁺/K⁺-ATPase is responsible or at least in part, for K⁺ entry into the cell, in exchange for Na⁺, thus, maintaining the Na⁺
gradient. This function for the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase had previously been suggested for the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* by Fogg (1990) and Baldrick *et al.*, (1988) and also for the tubules of *Rhodnius prolixus* (O'Donnell and Maddrell, 1984). The Na\(^+\) gradient established by the Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase can be used to drive the basal co-transporter.

The information obtained in the present study (Chapter 3 and Chapter 5) was used to construct a hypothetical model which seeks to explain the mechanisms of ion and fluid movements across the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. Figure 7.1 represents this model which is based upon that information generated in the present study and in previous studies carried out in this laboratory and elsewhere. It is suggested that the basal membrane possesses a classical Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)-ATPase (Baldrick *et al.*, 1988) and a furosemide-sensitive (Na\(^+\)/K\(^+\)/2Cl\(^-\)) co-transporter, in addition to hormone receptors and anomalous rectified K\(^+\) channels (Hyde *et al.*, 1997). The apical membrane is considered to possess a V-type ATPase (Beyenbach, 1995) that creates a proton gradient that drives a H\(^+\)/Me\(^+\) co-transporter responsible for the secretion of K\(^+\) and Na\(^+\) into the lumen (O'Donnell *et al.*, 1996). The fact that the protein kinase C inhibitors, chelerythrine and staurosporine, the protein kinase A inhibitor, Rp-cAMP, and the protein phosphatase 1 and 2A, okadaic acid, inhibit fluid secretion suggests that protein kinases and protein phosphatases, change the phosphorylated status of transport proteins at the basal or apical surfaces or both and are therefore important in the regulation/control of tubule function.

A number of workers (Prince and Berridge, 1972; Berridge and Prince, 1972a,b; Berridge *et al.*, 1975b; Maddrell, 1980) have proposed models for the endocrine control of ion translocation by epithelial cells in insects in which cAMP acts as intracellular second messenger. Fogg *et al.*, (1989; 1990) found that depolarization of \(V_A\) was
Chapter 7 General Discussion

Figure 7.1

A schematic diagram of the model proposed to explain anion and cation transport across the cells of the Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria* and their endocrine control. In this model, the basal membrane faces the bathing medium, whilst the apical membrane faces the lumen.

In this model, it is proposed that a basal (Na^+K^+)−ATPase maintains the cellular gradients for Na^+ (O’Donnell and Maddrell, 1984; Baldrick et al., 1988). It is proposed that passive exit of K^+ along its concentration gradient, and passive entry of Na^+, along its concentration and electrical gradient, occurs across the basal membrane. It would appear that passive Cl^- entry, along its concentration and electrical gradients, only occurs on elevation of external [K^+](O’Grady et al., 1987). K^+ entry across the basal membrane seems to be by the action of the (Na^+K^+)−ATPase (Anstee et al., 1986). Cl^- and K^+ may enter via the Na^+/K^+/2Cl^- co-transporter in a process driven by the Na^+ gradient. Cl^- entry may be by Cl^-HCO_3^- exchange and by the action of a (Cl^-HCO_3^-)-ATPase both aided by increases in intracellular pH (Hanrahan and Phillips, 1983).

At the apical surface K^+ and Na^+ exit is postulated to occur via separate antiporters which are energized by a V-type ATPase (Wieczorek et al., 1989; 1991; Marshall, 1995). The exit of Cl^- occurs passively down a favourable electrical gradient (Morgan and Mordue, 1983; Baldrick et al., 1988).

It is suggested that diuretic hormone (DH), appears to interact with a basal membrane receptors DP-1 and DP-2, resulting in the elevation in levels of the intracellular second messengers, cAMP (Fogg et al., 1989) and DAG/IP_3, respectively. cAMP, in turn, stimulates PKA which acts via the apical Na^+ electrogenic cation pump and also may stimulate the basal Na^+/K^+/2Cl^- co-transporter (Hegarty et al., 1991). PKC acts via the apical K^+/H^+ antiporter and may also be involved in the mechanism of Na^+/K^+−ATPase regulation at the basal membrane (Bertorello et al., 1991). These suggestions are consistent with the V-type ATPase requiring activation via PKA and PKC to maintain the H^+ gradient.
effected by CC extract in control saline, but not by cAMP. Similarly, in the present study, CC extract effected changes in the [K⁺] and [Na⁺] in "urine" secreted, whilst cAMP did not. These observations suggested that diuretic factors in CC extract may exert a control epithelial Na⁺ and K⁺ transport in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. In addition, it would be consistent with findings of previous studies (Fogg et al., 1989; 1990) to suggest that the different responses to CC extract, and cAMP indicated that cAMP alone cannot mediate the full effects of DH in Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*. Fogg et al., (1990) suggested that some component of CC extract, in addition to controlling cation movements, is modifying Cl⁻ movement across both the basal and apical membranes and increased anion conductance may be independent of cAMP.

Fluid secretion by *Locusta* Malpighian tubules is controlled by two diuretic peptides (DP-1 and DP-2), derived from the corpora cardiaca which act at different receptor sites (Morgan and Mordue, 1987). DP-1 acts at a receptor which stimulates the adenylate cyclase/cAMP signaling pathway (Morgan and Mordue, 1985 and Coast et al., 1993). DP-2 is suggested to act via the phosphoinositide/Ca²⁺ signaling pathway (Figure 7.1), Fogg et al., (1990) have demonstrated that IP₃ levels are also raised in tubule cells stimulated by CC extract. Additionally, Kay et al., (1991) have demonstrated that a diuretic peptide (*Locusta*-DP) isolated from locust heads was also present in the corpora cardiaca and discovered that a synthetic analogue of this peptide stimulated cAMP production. More recently Coast et al., (1993) have also shown that *Locusta*-DP increases the rate of fluid secretion by the tubules of *Locusta migratoria* and increases the levels of cAMP.

The various effects of CC extract, cAMP alone and in the presence of PKC and PKA inhibitors on the apical surface can be best explained if Na⁺ and K⁺ exit the cell via different antiporters. The data presented are consistent with PKA activation of a Na⁺/H⁺
antiporter and PKC activation of a \( K^+/H^+ \) antiporter. The ability of CC extract to stimulate fluid production in the presence of PKC but not PKA inhibitors again emphasizes that at least two arms of the signalling pathway are essential. These data are consistent with the V-type ATPase requiring activation via PKA to maintain the \( H^+ \) gradient without which \( Na^+ \) and \( K^+ \) extrusion via the co-transporter(s), which depend on that gradient (Zeiske, 1992) will slow progressively.

Little is known of the regulation of the function of the apical V-type ATPase or the putative apical \( H^+/Me^+ \) counter-transporter but this too may involve protein phosphorylation. Indeed, Weinman and Shenolikar (1986), and Weinman et al., (1988) have demonstrated that the renal tubule apical membrane \( Na^+/H^+ \) exchanger is stimulated by PKC. The use of inhibitors of both PKC and PKA activity could provide useful further insight into the control of fluid secretion by Malpighian tubule cells.


ASTON, R. J. (1975). The role of adenosine 3':5'-cyclic monophosphate in relation to the diuretic hormone of Rhodnius prolixus. J. Insect Physio. 21, 1873-1877.

ASTON, R. J. (1979). Studies on the diuretic hormone of Rhodnius prolixus. Some observations on the purification and nature of the hormone and the dynamics of its release in vitro. Insect Biochem. 9, 163-176.


HCO₃⁻ and Cl⁻ -dependent ATPase activities in the rectum of larval dragonflies 
217-227.

Transepithelial short circuit current, potential difference and their dependence on 

without buffer tank for rapid transfer of proteins from polyacrylamide to 


characterisation and expression of the (Na⁺ + K⁺)-ATPase alpha subunit in 


ATPases in proton transport by gastric microsomal vesicles. Annals N. Y. Acad. 
Sci. 341, 297-311.

Characteristics of the Locusta migratoria diuretic hormone. Arch. Insect 
Biochem. Physiol. 22, 133-140.


161 amino acids of the Na,K-ATPase α-subunit are sufficient for assembly 
with the β-subunit. J. Biol. Chem. 267, 20987-20991.

in the tobacco hornworm midgut:the K⁺-transporting component of the K⁺ pump. 

LEPIER, A., GRAF, R, AZUMA, M., MERZENDORFER, H, HARVEY, W. R. AND 
WIECZOREK, H. (1996). The peripheral complex of the tobacco hornworm V-

ATPase contains a novel 13-kDa subunit G. J. Biol. Chem. 271, 8502-8508.


LEYSENS, A., ZHANG, S., VAN KERKHOVE, E. AND STEELS, P. (1992b). Dinitrophenol inhibits H\(^+\) transport and consequently stops K\(^+\) and fluid secretion in Malpighian tubules (Formica). *Pflügers Arch.* 420, (Suppl. 1), R75.


APPENDICES

APPENDIX (1)

Appendix 1.1

Determination of IC$_{50}$ and 95% confidence limits:

Notation:

- $y_1, \ldots, y_n$ denotes available probits,
- $x_1, \ldots, x_n$ denotes corresponding effect of inhibitors.

Calculate:

\[
\bar{x} = \frac{\sum x}{n} \quad \text{and} \quad \bar{y} = \frac{\sum y}{n}
\]

\[
S_{xx} = \left( \sum x^2 \right) - \frac{\left( \sum x \right)^2}{n} \quad S_{yy} = \left( \sum y^2 \right) - \frac{\left( \sum y \right)^2}{n} \quad S_{xy} = \left( \sum xy \right) - \frac{\left( \sum x \right)\left( \sum y \right)}{n}
\]

Procedure:

\[y = a + b(x - \bar{x}),\]

estimated intercept \( a = \bar{y}, \)

estimated slope \( b = \frac{S_{xy}}{S_{xx}}.\)

Median effective inhibitor (PI$_{50}$) = \( m = \bar{x} + \frac{5-a}{b}, \)

95% confidence limits set by \( m \pm \text{s.e. (mean)} \times t, \) where \( t \) is the tabulated student \( t \) value (95%) with \( n-2 \) degree of freedom.

\[
\text{s.e. of } m = \sqrt{\frac{s^2}{b^2} \left[ \frac{1}{n} + \left( \frac{M-x}{S_{xx}} \right)^2 \right]^2},
\]

where \( s^2 = \frac{1}{n-2} \left[ S_{yy} - \left( \frac{S_{xy}}{S_{xx}} \right)^2 \right]. \)
APPENDIX (2)

Table (2.1)

Effect of different concentrations of chelerythrine on the fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Chelerythrine [µM]</th>
<th>Rate of fluid secretion nl/min ± SEM</th>
<th>R2/R1 x 100 ± SEM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>n</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.6 ± 0.3</td>
<td>95.4 ± 0.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.3 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>3.9 ± 1.0</td>
<td>81.9 ± 3.5</td>
<td>&lt;0.005</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>2.9 ± 0.6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>3.5 ± 0.4</td>
<td>72.3 ± 3.4</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2.1 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.8 ± 0.6</td>
<td>63.5 ± 3.1</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>2.9 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.2 ± 0.5</td>
<td>44.0 ± 4.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.6 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.8 ± 1.0</td>
<td>30.1 ± 3.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.5 ± 1.0</td>
<td>20.9 ± 1.8</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>0.6 ± 0.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.4 ± 0.7</td>
<td>16.0 ± 2.2</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>0.7 ± 0.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired 't' test.

Table (2.2)

Effect of different concentrations of Rp-cAMP on the fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Rp-cAMP [µM]</th>
<th>Rate of fluid secretion nl/min ± SEM</th>
<th>R2/R1 x 100 ± SEM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>n</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.9 ± 0.5</td>
<td>96.6 ± 2.9</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.6 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.4 ± 0.4</td>
<td>85.4 ± 5.6</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>3.8 ± 0.4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.0 ± 0.6</td>
<td>74.0 ± 5.3</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.8 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.3 ± 0.5</td>
<td>65.2 ± 3.8</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>2.7 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.5 ± 0.5</td>
<td>57.1 ± 4.0</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>2.5 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>5.0 ± 0.8</td>
<td>38.0 ± 4.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate 2</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1.8 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired 't' test.
Table (2.3)

Effect of different concentrations of NEM on the fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NEM [µM]</th>
<th>Rate 1 Rate 2</th>
<th>Rate of fluid secretion nl/min ± SEM</th>
<th>R2/R1x100 ± SEM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>n</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.2 ± 0.3</td>
<td>90.5 ± 1.8</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2.2 ± 0.3</td>
<td>70.8 ± 5.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.005</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>4.9 ± 0.6</td>
<td>59.3 ± 6.0</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>3.7 ± 0.5</td>
<td>49.0 ± 6.2</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>7.5 ± 1.8</td>
<td>36.4 ± 5.0</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>3.5 ± 0.5</td>
<td>8.3 ± 1.0</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired 't' test.

Table (2.4)

Effect of different concentrations of okadaic acid on the fluid secretion by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Okadaic acid [nM]</th>
<th>Rate 1 Rate 2</th>
<th>Rate of fluid secretion nl/min ± SEM</th>
<th>R2/R1x100 ± SEM</th>
<th>p</th>
<th>n</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.6 ± 0.5</td>
<td>93.8 ± 1.6</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>4.5 ± 0.6</td>
<td>87.2 ± 3.2</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>5.1 ± 0.7</td>
<td>84.6 ± 4.3</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>5.3 ± 0.6</td>
<td>79.2 ± 2.9</td>
<td>&lt;0.01</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>4.5 ± 0.9</td>
<td>75.2 ± 2.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.005</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>5.3 ± 0.7</td>
<td>70.0 ± 3.4</td>
<td>&lt;0.002</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>4.0 ± 0.3</td>
<td>65.3 ± 2.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>3.8 ± 0.7</td>
<td>56.3 ± 4.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>3.8 ± 0.7</td>
<td>48.0 ± 3.5</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>5.7 ± 0.9</td>
<td>42.0 ± 4.6</td>
<td>&lt;0.001</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>3.2 ± 0.3</td>
<td>30.5 ± 2.7</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired 't' test.
**Table (2.5)**

Effect of 1μM chelerythrine on ratio of Na⁺/K⁺ concentrations in the secreted fluid by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Incubation media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Na⁺/K⁺ Ratio (Mean ± S.E.M)</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Ch.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + CC</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.54 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + Ch.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Ch. + CC</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.48 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.02</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + Ch.</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Ch. + cAMP</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>0.43 ± 0.01</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired ‘t’ test.

**Table (2.6)**

Effect of 1μM staurosporine on ratio of Na⁺/K⁺ concentrations in the secreted fluid by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Incubation media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Na⁺/K⁺ Ratio (Mean ± S.E.M)</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + St.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + CC</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.54 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + St.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + St. + CC</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.47 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.02</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + St.</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>0.36 ± 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + St. + cAMP</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>0.37 ± 0.01</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired ‘t’ test.
Table (2.7)

Effect of 0.1mM Rp-cAMP on ratio of Na⁺/K⁺ concentrations in the secreted fluid by Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Incubation media</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Na⁺/K⁺ Ratio (Mean ± S.E.M)</th>
<th>p</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 normal</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.01</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.30 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Rp.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + CC</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.54 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + Rp.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Rp. + CC</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 normal</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.01</td>
<td>n.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + cAMP</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.02</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate1 + Rp.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.01</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rate2 + Rp. + cAMP</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.02</td>
<td>&lt;0.0001</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p values were obtained by comparing Rate 1 and Rate 2 by paired ‘t’ test.
APPENDIX (3)

Table (3.1)
ATPases activity of various membrane fractions from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Membrane fractions</th>
<th>Mg(^{2+})-ATPase activity</th>
<th>Total-ATPase activity</th>
<th>Na(^+)/K(^-)-ATPase activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Crude</td>
<td>163.4 ± 08.0</td>
<td>230.6 ± 9.3</td>
<td>66.8 ± 4.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1</td>
<td>196.7 ± 12.2</td>
<td>262.8 ± 15.6</td>
<td>55.4 ± 9.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P2</td>
<td>279.4 ± 21.2</td>
<td>346.0 ± 26.6</td>
<td>71.4 ± 6.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P3</td>
<td>440.7 ± 27.9</td>
<td>572.6 ± 33.2</td>
<td>131.9 ± 11.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P4</td>
<td>446.5 ± 11.7</td>
<td>781.1 ± 15.4</td>
<td>331.9 ± 21.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5</td>
<td>597.4 ± 38.1</td>
<td>629.9 ± 45.7</td>
<td>26.7 ± 5.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S1</td>
<td>192.3 ± 8.6</td>
<td>250.4 ± 12.7</td>
<td>65.1 ± 7.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S2</td>
<td>169.6 ± 8.7</td>
<td>206.4 ± 10.5</td>
<td>48.2 ± 5.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S3</td>
<td>21.8 ± 1.8</td>
<td>22.9 ± 1.9</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S5</td>
<td>37.5 ± 6.2</td>
<td>38.5 ± 7.2</td>
<td>2.4 ± 0.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (3.2)
Purity of alkaline phosphatase and succinate dehydrogenase enzymes from the various membrane fractions obtained from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Membrane fractions</th>
<th>Alkaline phosphatase activity *</th>
<th>Succinate dehydrogenase activity $</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Crude</td>
<td>325.4 ± 31.0</td>
<td>123.0 ± 6.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P1</td>
<td>181.6 ± 12.1</td>
<td>115.4 ± 12.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P2</td>
<td>466.3 ± 19.4</td>
<td>287.2 ± 29.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P3</td>
<td>1017.7 ± 38.5</td>
<td>103.2 ± 15.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P4</td>
<td>2530.1 ± 45.5</td>
<td>133.1 ± 23.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5</td>
<td>3063.3 ± 145.5</td>
<td>10.0 ± 1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S1</td>
<td>467.4 ± 30.7</td>
<td>113.8 ± 13.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S2</td>
<td>402.4 ± 93.2</td>
<td>69.4 ± 15.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S3</td>
<td>36.4 ± 4.1</td>
<td>16.5 ± 2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S5</td>
<td>182.0 ± 10.8</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(\*) Activity is expressed as nmoles p-nitrophenol liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
($$) Activity is expressed as nmoles succinate oxidized mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
APPENDIX (4)

Table (4.1)

ATPase activity in the basal and apical membrane fractions from Malpighian tubules of *Locusta migratoria*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Membrane fractions</th>
<th>Mg(^{2+})-dependent ATPase activity</th>
<th>stimulation due to the presence of NaHCO(_3) instead of NaCl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>+20mM NaCl</td>
<td>+20mM NaHCO(_3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P4</td>
<td>435.8 ± 11.6</td>
<td>645.0 ± 38.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P5</td>
<td>650.3 ± 33.6</td>
<td>979.6 ± 43.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\). Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (4.2)

Effect of various inhibitors on ATPases activity of the apical membrane pellet (P4)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Inhibitors</th>
<th>Mg(^{2+})-dependent ATPases activity</th>
<th>stimulation due to the presence of NaHCO(_3) instead of NaCl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>+20mM NaCl</td>
<td>+20mM NaHCO(_3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Control</td>
<td>451.3±15.1</td>
<td>631.4±20.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaSCN</td>
<td>49.7±4.8</td>
<td>103.6±8.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEM</td>
<td>424.2±11.0</td>
<td>635.5±29.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baf.</td>
<td>431.8±18.1</td>
<td>631.7±33.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azide</td>
<td>216.8±15.9</td>
<td>301.2±13.8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Inhibitors concentration:
10mM NaSCN, 1mM NEM, Baf. = 1µM Bafilomycin A\(_1\), 1mM Azide.
Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\). Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
### Table (4.3)

Effect of various inhibitors on ATPases activity of the apical membrane pellet (P5)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Inhibitors</th>
<th>Mg(^{2+})-dependent ATPases activity</th>
<th>stimulation due to the presence of NaHCO(_3) instead of NaCl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>+20mM NaCl</td>
<td>+20mM NaHCO(_3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Control</td>
<td>719.6±35.2</td>
<td>1019.3±41.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NaSCN</td>
<td>116.9±10.4</td>
<td>156.6±26.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEM</td>
<td>672.1±35.5</td>
<td>703.7±45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baf</td>
<td>689.8±43.8</td>
<td>743.3±53.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Azide</td>
<td>528.9±36.3</td>
<td>735.7±27.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Inhibitors concentration:
10mM NaSCN, 1mM NEM, Baf. = 1μM Bafilomycin A\(_1\), 1mM Azide.
Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (4.4)

Effect of pH concentrations on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>pH</th>
<th>V-type ATPase activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>418.1 ± 29.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>912.0 ± 75.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>1773.3 ± 78.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>2153.4 ± 100.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>2076.8 ± 86.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>1659.3 ± 79.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.0</td>
<td>960.8 ± 79.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>29.6 ± 9.31</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\).
Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.
**Table (4.5)**

Effect of ATP concentrations on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[ATP] mM</th>
<th>V-type ATPase activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>156.0 ± 25.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>320.7 ± 17.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>663.6 ± 38.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1319.6 ± 48.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1895.5 ± 84.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2318.1 ± 76.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>2469.7 ± 50.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>2488.8 ± 55.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>2485.0 ± 48.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>2477.0 ± 44.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\textsubscript{i} liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}. Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.

**Table (4.6)**

Effect of MgCl\textsubscript{2} on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[MgCl\textsubscript{2}] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>175.5 ± 17.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>701.0 ± 66.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1240.7 ± 64.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1757.3 ± 91.91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2169.4 ± 83.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>2296.3 ± 50.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>2339.5 ± 77.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>2366.5 ± 72.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>2328.5 ± 92.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\textsubscript{i} liberated mg protein\textsuperscript{-1} min\textsuperscript{-1}. Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.
### Table (4.7)

**Effect of NEM on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[NEM] μM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
<th>% Activity remaining</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Control</td>
<td>1945.5 ± 75.5</td>
<td>100.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1874.1 ± 72.5</td>
<td>96.4 ± 1.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1719.8 ± 117.5</td>
<td>89.9 ± 2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1013.9 ± 106.2</td>
<td>59.1 ± 4.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>373.4 ± 55.4</td>
<td>32.0 ± 2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>172.5 ± 32.7</td>
<td>14.3 ± 1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>97.1 ± 32.0</td>
<td>6.8 ± 0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>17.6 ± 3.0</td>
<td>1.7 ± 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1000</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pi liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (3.8)

**Effect of Bafilomycin on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[Bafilomycin] nM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
<th>% Activity remaining</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Control</td>
<td>1640.8 ± 74.0</td>
<td>100.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1267.2 ± 64.2</td>
<td>77.3 ± 1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>852.3 ± 61.9</td>
<td>51.9 ± 2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>491.6 ± 76.5</td>
<td>31.4 ± 2.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>167.2 ± 14.4</td>
<td>10.2 ± 0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>58.9 ± 12.3</td>
<td>3.6 ± 0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>40.6 ± 11.8</td>
<td>2.3 ± 0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>15.6 ± 2.40</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pi liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 5 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (3.9)

**Effect of KCl on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KCl] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>824.0 ± 23.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>942.3 ± 28.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>1058.7 ± 21.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>1201.8 ± 26.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1399.2 ± 76.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1594.5 ± 114.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1501.8 ± 52.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>1158.4 ± 35.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pi liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
### Table (4.10)

**Effect of NaCl on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[NaCl] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>777.8 ± 60.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>1085.0 ± 40.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1300.7 ± 68.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1461.1 ± 62.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1510.4 ± 87.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>1500.6 ± 71.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>1451.5 ± 35.9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (4.11)

**Effect of LiCl on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[LiCl] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>760.3 ± 35.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>964.7 ± 51.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1130.1 ± 40.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1165.2 ± 60.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1140.5 ± 53.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>1120.3 ± 61.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>1098.7 ± 45.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (4.12)

**Effect of Choline CI on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[Choline CI] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>788.6 ± 64.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>1020.7 ± 80.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1225.0 ± 72.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1416.7 ± 55.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1478.3 ± 85.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>1490.5 ± 70.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>1442.1 ± 49.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
Table (4.13)

Effect of Tris-HCl on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[Tris] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>791.6 ± 68.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>956.0 ± 70.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1311.2 ± 80.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1701.3 ± 92.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1916.7 ± 110.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>2008.1 ± 123.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>2000.4 ± 130.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70.0</td>
<td>1881.9 ± 121.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80.0</td>
<td>1650.3 ± 119.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (4.14)

Effect of RbCl on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[RbCl] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>721.3 ± 42.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>815.1 ± 51.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>925.6 ± 60.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>985.3 ± 70.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1020.9 ± 30.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>1010.7 ± 55.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>985.3 ± 65.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
Table (4.15)

Effect of KHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KHCO₃] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>601.9 ± 40.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>829.1 ± 78.91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1195.8 ± 110.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1521.1 ± 135.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1810.7 ± 142.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>2063.1 ± 160.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>2305.6 ± 151.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70.0</td>
<td>2388.9 ± 172.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80.0</td>
<td>2357.1 ± 180.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100.0</td>
<td>2240.0 ± 163.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (4.16)

Effect of NaHCO₃ on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[NaHCO₃] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>640.2 ± 41.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>950.3 ± 87.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1289.1 ± 110.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1611.3 ± 130.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1892.6 ± 121.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>2040.9 ± 140.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>2187.6 ± 117.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70.0</td>
<td>2210.3 ± 131.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80.0</td>
<td>2208.7 ± 121.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100.0</td>
<td>2166.3 ± 128.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (4.17)

Effect of KSO₄ on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KSO₄] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>790.3 ± 65.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>953.8 ± 71.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1160.2 ± 50.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1210.9 ± 80.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>1101.4 ± 69.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>990.6 ± 70.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>951.1 ± 60.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles Pᵢ liberated mg protein⁻¹ min⁻¹. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
Table (4.18)

Effect of K Gluconate on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[K Gluconate] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>642.1 ± 31.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>765.9 ± 52.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>850.1 ± 71.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>921.1 ± 63.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>942.3 ± 75.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>931.0 ± 61.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>895.7 ± 50.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

Table (4.19)

Effect of KF on V-type ATPase activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KF] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>772.2 ± 45.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>805.1 ± 75.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>880.7 ± 50.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>949.8 ± 70.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>1006.3 ± 30.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>1000.1 ± 25.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P_i liberated mg protein^{-1} min^{-1}. Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.
### Table (4.20)

**Effect of KBr on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KBr] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>673.8 ± 32.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>746.3 ± 30.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>819.6 ± 45.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>828.6 ± 41.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>765.8 ± 50.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50.0</td>
<td>650.3 ± 37.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>535.7 ± 40.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\). Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.

### Table (4.21)

**Effect of KNO\(_3\) on V-type ATPase activity**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>[KNO(_3)] mM</th>
<th>Specific activity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>801.3 ± 35.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>565.9 ± 40.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>379.7 ± 65.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>301.8 ± 30.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>235.2 ± 32.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30.0</td>
<td>228.1 ± 25.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Activity is expressed as nmoles P\(_i\) liberated mg protein\(^{-1}\) min\(^{-1}\). Each value represents the average for 3 experiments ± S.E.M.